





17

100 fol

Geographische oder Geographische Reise des Herrn  
Johann Friedrich von d. Hof. Aug. Hattich,  
Leipzig 17 — 1780. gr. 8. 3 voll.

f. Allg. L. Biblioth. H. XXXIX. f.

H. XLIII. f. Anfang der Reise XXXVIII —

L. II. Buch H. III. f. 1305. H.













L E T T E R S,  
S E R M O N S,  
A N D  
A R E V I E W of  
E C C L E S I A S T I C A L H I S T O R Y.

By J O H N N E W T O N,  
Late Curate of Olney, Bucks.

I N T H R E E V O L U M E S.

V O L. I I I.



E D I N B U R G H :

Printed by A. MURRAY and J. COCHRAN.

Sold, at Edinburgh, by Mess. Gray, Dickson, and Elliot; at Glasgow, by Mess. J. Duncan, Dunlop & Wilson, and J. Bryce; at Aberdeen, by Angus & Son; at Perth, by J. Gillies; at Dundee, by R. Nicol; at Kelfo, by G. Elliot; and at Dumfries, by E. Wilson.

M D C C L X X X.





## INTRODUCTION.

**T**HOUGH the actions of mankind appear greatly diversified from the influence of particular circumstances, human nature has been always the same. The history of all ages and countries uniformly confirms the scriptural doctrine, that man is a depraved and fallen creature, and that some selfish temper, ambition, avarice, pride, revenge, and the like, are, in effect, the main springs and motives of his conduct, unless so far, and in such instances, as they are corrected and subdued by divine grace.

Therefore, when St Paul speaks of the most dreadful degree of impiety that can be imagined, *enmity against God*, he does not consider it as the fault of the particular time in which he lived, or impute it singly either to the idolatrous Heathens, or the obstinate Jews, but he affirms universally, that *the carnal mind* (το φρονημα της σαρκος) the wisdom, the most spiritual and discerning faculty of man, is enmity against God. Men differ considerably in capacity, rank, education, and attainments, they jar in sentiments and interests, they mutually revile, hate, and destroy one another; but in this point they all agree, whether Greeks or Barbarians, wise or ignorant, bond or free, the bent and disposition of their minds, while unrenewed by grace, is black and implacable enmity against the blessed God.

To those who acknowledge the authority of scripture, St Paul's express assertion should be sufficient



proof of this point, if we could produce no other; but, besides the many other passages in the book of God to the same effect, it may be demonstrated by the most obvious proofs, experience and matter of fact. The history of the Old Testament from the death of Abel, the nature and grounds of the opposition which Jesus and his apostles met with, and the treatment of the most exemplary Christians that have lived in succeeding ages, are indisputable evidences of this offensive truth; for what can be stronger marks of enmity against God, than to despise his word, to scorn his favour, to oppose his will, to caress his enemies, and to insult and abuse his servants, for no other offence than their attachment to his service!

But when, from these premises, the apostle infers, so then they that are in the flesh cannot please God, though the consequence is evident, it may seem at first view unnecessary; for can it be supposed that the carnal mind, which breathes a spirit of defiance and enmity against God, will have any desire or thought of pleasing him? yet thus it is. —The carnal mind is not only desperately wicked, but deeply deceitful; it deceives others, and often it deceives itself. As the magicians of Egypt, tho' enemies to Moses, attempted to counterfeit his miracles, and as Balaam could say, "The Lord my God!" though he was wickedly engaged against the Lord's people; so it has been usual with many who have hated and denied the power of godliness, to value themselves highly upon the form of it, and while they are alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, they affect to be thought his best servants, and make the most confident claims to his favour.

The pure religion of Jesus cannot but be despised.



fed and rejected by the carnal mind: the natural man receiveth not the things of God; they are beyond his sphere; he does not apprehend them, and therefore cannot approve them; nay, he is averse and unwilling to meddle with them, and therefore it is impossible he should understand them. But the fiercest opposition arises from the complication of presumption and hypocrisy we have spoken of; when men, destitute of the Spirit of God, from a vain conceit of their own wisdom and goodness, arrogate to themselves an authoritative decision in religious concerns, and would reduce the judgement and practice of others to their own corrupt standard.

Such was eminently the character of the Scribes and Pharisees, who, with unwearied malice, persecuted our Lord to the death of the cross; and he forewarned his disciples to expect the like treatment; he sent them forth as lambs in the midst of wolves, and assured them that their attachment to him would draw on them the hatred of mankind, so far as even to deprive them of the rights of civil society, and the pleasures of relative life. A man's foes shall be those of his own household; his parents shall forget their affection, his children their duty, his servants their reverence, even the wife of his bosom shall despise him, when he boldly professes the gospel; nay, the most amiable qualities, joined to the most endearing connections, are not sufficient wholly to suppress the enmity which fills the hearts of the unregenerate, against those in whom they discern the image of Christ: and that this enmity would sometimes assume a religious form, and under that appearance, proceed to the greatest extremities, he informed them, in another place. The time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doth God service.



If a faith and practice agreeable to the New Testament were not always attended with a measure of this opposition, we should want one considerable evidence that the gospel is true; and infidels would be possessed of one solid objection against it, namely, That our Lord was mistaken when he predicted the reception his doctrine would meet with. But the scriptures cannot be broken: the word of Christ is fulfilled and fulfilling every day, and especially in this particular. Many perhaps will be ready to object here, and to maintain, that, in our nation, and at this present time, the charge is invidious and false. It will be pleaded, that when Christianity had to struggle with Jews and Pagans, it could not but be opposed; but that with us, under the guard of a national establishment, an opposition to Christianity (unless by the feeble efforts of Deists and Libertines) is impracticable and inconsistent by the very terms; and that if the delusions of a few visionary enthusiasts are treated with that contempt and indignation which they justly deserve, this should not be stiled an opposition to Christianity, but rather a warrantable concern for its vindication, especially as no coercive methods are used; for though some attempts have been made to restrain the leaders from poisoning the minds of the people, yet no person is injured, either in life or property, on account of his opinions, how extravagant soever.

To this extenuation it may be replied,

1. I do not assert, that persecution and reproach must necessarily attend the *name* of a Christian, or that it is not possible to make a high profession of religion under that name, and at the same time preserve or acquire a large share of the honours, riches, and friendship of the world; but I maintain with the apostle, "All that will live godly in  
" Christ



“Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.” The distinction he makes in these words is observable: So much godliness as may be professed without a peculiar relation to Jesus, the world will bear; sobriety and benevolence they will applaud; even prayers, fastings, and other external acts, may be commended; — but to live godly in Christ Jesus, — so as to profess our whole dependence upon his free salvation; to seek all our strength from his grace; to do all expressly for his sake; and then to renounce all trust or confidence in what we have done, and to make mention of his righteousness only; — this the world cannot bear: this will surely provoke the contempt or hatred of all who have not the same spirit, whether accounted Christians or Infidels, Papists or Protestants. That nothing less than what I have mentioned can be the import of living godly in Christ Jesus, I shall in due time prove by a cloud of witnesses.

2. I acknowledge, with thankfulness to God, and to those whom he has placed in just authority over us, that the interposition of stripes, imprisonment, tortures, and death, in matters pertaining to conscience, has no longer place in our happy land:

*— jacet (semperque jaceat!)  
Divini Imago Zeli et Pestis.*

The spirit of persecution is repressed by the wisdom of our laws, and the clemency of our princes; but we have no ground to believe it is extinct, or rather, we have sufficient evidence of the contrary. Not to mention some recent instances, in which power has been strained to its full extent, it is notorious that scorn, invective, and calumny, (which can act unrestrained by human laws), are employed for the same ends and purposes, which, in o-  
ther



ther countries, are more' speedily effected by anathemas and sanguinary edicts.

3. The opposition I am speaking of is not primarily between men and men, simply considered, but between the spirit of the world and the spirit that is of God; and therefore the manifestation of each will be in mutual proportion. The Lord Jesus himself sustained the fiercest contradiction of sinners, because his character was superlatively excellent: his apostles, though far inferior to their Lord, expressed so much of his temper and conduct, that they were counted worthy to suffer shame in the next degree to him: As he was, so were they in the world. St Paul, who laboured more abundantly than his brethren, experienced a larger share of dishonour and ill treatment. Tho' educated at the feet of Gamaliel, and no stranger to Grecian literature, when he shewed himself determined to know nothing but Jesus, and to glory only in *his* cross, he was accounted, by Jew and Gentile, as the filth and off-scouring of all things; and thus it will hold universally. If therefore any who sincerely espouse the gospel meet with little disturbance or censure, it is not because the carnal mind is better reconciled to the truth than formerly in the apostles days, but because our zeal, faith, and activity, are so much inferior to theirs, and our conduct more conformable to the prevailing taste around us.

4. I confess that (as our Saviour has taught us to expect by the parable of the tares) revivals of religion have been generally attended with some incidental offences, and counterfeited by many false appearances. It has been so in times past; it is so at present; and we are far from justifying every thing, and in every degree, that the world is ready  
to.



to condemn. However, we cannot but complain of a want of candour and ingenuousness in this respect also. Many who bring loud charges against what is irregular and blameable, are evidently glad of the opportunity to prejudice and alarm weak minds. They do not confine their reproof to what is erroneous and unscriptural, but endeavour, by ambiguous expressions, invidious names, and indiscriminate censures, to obscure the state of the question, and to brand error and truth with the same mark of infamy: they either cannot, or will not, distinguish between evangelical principles and the abuse of them; and when the distinction has been pointed out to them again and again, they refuse attention, and repeat the same stale misrepresentations which they know have been often refuted: they will not allow a grain for infirmity or inadvertence in those whom they oppose, while they demand the largest concessions for themselves and their adherents: they expect strict demonstrations from others, while, in their own cause, they are not ashamed to produce slanders for proofs, and jests for arguments: thus they triumph without a victory, and decide, *ex cathedra*, without so much as entering upon the merits of the cause. These methods, however successful, are not new inventions: by such arts and arms as these, Christianity was opposed from its first appearance; in this way Lucian, Celsus, and Julian employed their talents, and made themselves famous to future times.

I judge it therefore a seasonable undertaking, to attempt the apology of Evangelical Christianity, and to obviate the sophistry and calumnies which have been published against it; and this I hope to do, without engaging in any controversy, by a plain enumeration of facts. I propose to give a brief delineation of Ecclesiastical History from our Saviour's



viour's time, and, that the reader may know what to expect, I shall here subjoin the principal points I have in view.

I shall consider the genius and characteristic marks of the gospel which Jesus taught, and shew, that so long as this gospel was maintained in its purity, it neither admitted or found a neutrality, but that all who were not partakers of its benefits, were exceedingly enraged against it. I shall make it appear, that the same objections which have attended any reformatiions in later ages, were equally strong against Christianity, as taught by Christ and his first disciples; and that the offences and irregularities which have been known to attend a revival of evangelical doctrine in our time, were prevalent, to a considerable degree, under the preaching and inspection of the apostles.

2. When I come to the lives and conduct of those called the *Fathers*, whose names are held in ignorant admiration by thousands, I shall prove; on the one hand, that the doctrines for which the fathers were truly commendable, and by which many were enabled to seal their profession with their blood, were the same which are now branded with the epithets of *absurd* and *enthusiastic*; and, on the other hand, that the fathers, however venerable, were men like ourselves, subject to mistakes and infirmities, and began very soon to depart from the purity and simplicity of the gospel.

3. The progress of our history will manifest, that the accession of wealth and power to the Christian profession proved greatly detrimental to the faith, discipline, and manners of the churches; so that, after the Emperors publicly espoused the cause of Christ, the power and beauty of the gospel was gradually



gradually eclipsed. Yet in the most degenerate times God had a spiritual people, who, though partaking in some degree of the general declension, retained so much of the primitive truth and practice as to incur the hatred and persecution of (what is called) the Christian world.

4. I shall treat of the means and instruments by which the Lord supported and revived his declining cause during several centuries. 1. In the valleys of Piedmont, Provence, &c. by Berengarius, Waldo, and others. 2. In England, by Wickliff and his followers. 3. In Bohemia, by John Huss, and Jerom of Prague. 4. In Germany, by Luther. Here I shall take occasion to observe, 1. That these successive reformations were all projected and executed, so far as God was pleased to give success, upon the same principles which are now so industriously exploded, by many who would be thought champions of the Protestant faith. 2. That Luther's reformation, the most extensive and successful, and of which we have the best accounts, was soon followed by errors, heresies, and a numerous train of abominations (as had been the case with primitive Christianity) which the Romanists, in imitation of their Pagan predecessors, joyfully laid to the charge of the doctrine which Luther preached.

5. As it was not long before the reformed countries needed a second reformation, I shall give some account of the endeavours of many good men in Germany and other places in this view, their principles, success, and the treatment they met with from those who ought to have supported them; and then I shall briefly take notice of the similar occurrences in our own country, from the end of Queen Mary's reign to the present time, together with



with what has been most remarkable in the history of the gospel in our American settlements.

6. I shall occasionally consider the character and conduct of those persons whom God has honoured with eminent usefulness, in the different periods of his church, point out the defects in their plan, and the mistakes which, through infirmity, in some degree blemished their undertakings.

7. Finally, to make it evident, that the spiritual worshippers of God have always been a sect every where spoken against, I shall enumerate some of the reproachful names that have been successively fixed on them, as the mark of general contempt and abhorrence, such as Patarienes, Lollards, Huguenots, Gospellers, Puritans, Pietists, &c.

These particulars will be illustrated in the course of our history, not exactly in the order here laid down, but as the series of the narration shall require or suggest. I shall not confine myself to a nice uniformity of method, or a dry detail of facts, but shall endeavour to illustrate and apply the several incidents to the use and edification of common readers, and with a view to my primary design, which is (as I have already said) to vindicate the doctrines of the Reformation, or, in other words, the main doctrines taught in the articles and homilies of the church of England, from those unjust and disingenuous invectives which are every day cast upon them, by not a few who owe all their distinction and authority to their having solemnly engaged to defend them.

Whoever considers the intricacy and variety of ecclesiastical history, and that the best collections of that sort have swelled to a number of folios, will



will not expect to find every thing that might have deserved a place. The life of a man would hardly suffice to furnish a work of this sort in its just extent.

I must content myself with selecting a competent number of the most authentic and interesting topics, from the voluminous materials already published, but which, either from the size or scarceness of the books, or the languages in which they are written, are little more known to the generality of readers, than if they had never appeared in print.

I shall avoid, as far as possible, interfering in the controversies on church-government; reserving to myself, and willingly leaving to others, the rights of private judgement, the just privilege of Christians, Protestants, and Britons.

It must be confessed, that the bulk of ecclesiastical history, as it is generally understood, is little more than a history of what the passions, prejudices, and interested views of men, have prompted them to perpetrate, under the pretext and sanction of religion. Enough has been wrote in this way; curiosity, nay malice itself, need desire no more. I propose to open a more pleasing prospect, to point out, by a long succession of witnesses, the native tendency and proper influence of the religion of Jesus; to produce the concurring suffrage of different ages, people, and languages, in favour of what the wisdom of the world rejects and reviles; to bring unanswerable proofs, that the doctrine of grace is a doctrine according to godliness, that the constraining love of Christ is the most powerful motive to obedience, that it is the property of true faith to

VOL. III.

b

overcome



overcome the world, and that the true church and people of Christ have endured his cross in every age; the enemy has thrust fore at them that they might fall, but the Lord has been their refuge and support; they are placed upon a rock that cannot be shaken; they are kept, [φρουρουμένοι], guarded, and garrisoned, by the power of God; and therefore the gates of hell have not, cannot, shall not, prevail against them.

*Per damna, per cædes, ab ipso  
Ducit opes animumque ferro.*

P R E-

# P R E F A C E.

*A* Review of Ecclesiastical History, upon the plan proposed in the Introduction, is a subject of so much extent and difficulty, that, if I had not entered upon it before my admission into the ministry, I believe I should not have attempted it afterwards; for I soon found, that the stated care of a large parish, and a due attention to the occasional occurrences of every day, would leave me but little leisure for the prosecution of my design. Upon these accounts it was wholly intermitted for several years; and my progress, since I have resumed it, has been so slow, and my interruptions so many, that I had almost determined to content myself with publishing, in a single volume, a review of the first century. However, a desire of completing the work has prevailed; and I send this abroad with the title of a first volume, because I hope it will be followed by more, if the great God, who has the sovereign disposal of his creatures, shall be pleased to afford me a competent measure of health and ability for the service; but if he should see fit to appoint otherwise, I hope what I now offer to the public (though but a part of my intended plan) may suffice to shew how little just ground there is for the insinuations and invectives which have been so plentifully thrown out against the preachers and professors of those doctrines which were once esteemed the life and glory of the Protestant name.

I cannot expect that all my readers will be pleased with the application I have made of New-Testament facts to the state of religion in our own times; but as I am not conscious that I have written a single line with a view to provoke or inflame, I have only to intreat a candid perusal, and to commit the issue to him



*whom I desire to serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son. I have long thought an attempt of this kind would be seasonable; I pray that it may be useful. If it should in any measure contribute to remove or soften the prejudices by which great numbers are prevented from attending to the one thing needful, and induced to speak evil of that which they know not, I shall account my time well employed. I hope I have been influenced by no motives but the love of truth, and a desire to promote the welfare of immortal souls, and therefore have expressed my sentiments with plainness and freedom, as I think it behoves every one to do, when treating on subjects in which the truths of God and the souls of men are immediately concerned.*

OLNEY,  
November 1769.

JOHN NEWTON.

The Publishers have sufficient grounds for signifying, that whatever design the author, through the solicitation of friends, once entertained, of prosecuting the Review of Ecclesiastical History at greater length, that design is now entirely laid aside; and it is presumed that this will be the more readily excused, when it is considered, that the observations made with respect to the first century, seem originally intended, and with very little variation will be found, to apply to every succeeding period.

# C O N T E N T S.

## B o o k I.

Of the first period of Christianity.

Chap.		Pag.
1.	<i>The general state of the Heathens and Jews before and at the time of our Lord's incarnation,</i>	3
2.	<i>The character and genius of the gospel, as taught and exemplified by Christ,</i>	15
3.	<i>The true grounds of the opposition he met with in the course of his ministry, and the objections and artifices his enemies employed to prejudice the people against him, and prevent the reception of his doctrine,</i>	34
4.	<i>On the calling and characters of the apostles and disciples previous to our Lord's ascension,</i>	50

## B o o k II.

Of the second period of Christianity.

Chap.		Pag.
1.	<i>Of the progress of the gospel from our Lord's ascension to the close of the first century,</i>	77
2.	<i>Of the life and character of St Paul, considered as an exemplar or pattern of a minister of Jesus Christ,</i>	209
3.	<i>Of the irregularities and offences which appeared in the apostolic churches,</i>	246
4.	<i>Of the heresies propagated by false teachers in the apostles days,</i>	264

H Y M N



## H Y M N S.

	Pag.
1. <i>Adam,</i>	293
2. <i>Lot in Sodom,</i>	294
3. <i>The Lord will provide,</i>	295
4. <i>Joseph made known to his brethren,</i>	296
5. <i>The bitter waters,</i>	298
6. <i>Manna,</i>	299
7. <i>Manna hoarded,</i>	ib.
8. <i>The golden calf,</i>	300
9. <i>The true Aaron,</i>	301
10. <i>Sampson's lion,</i>	302
11. <i>Hannah; or, The throne of grace,</i>	303
12. <i>Saul's armour,</i>	304
13. <i>David's fall,</i>	306
14. <i>Queen of Sheba,</i>	307
15. <i>Elijah fed by ravens,</i>	308
16. <i>The meal and cruse of oil,</i>	309
17. <i>The joy of the Lord is our strength,</i>	310
18. <i>Oh that I were as in months past,</i>	311
19. <i>None upon earth I desire besides thee,</i>	312
20. <i>The believer's safety,</i>	313
21. <i>He led them by a right way,</i>	314
22. <i>What shall I render?</i>	315
23. <i>Vanity of life,</i>	ib.
24. <i>The name of Jesus,</i>	316
25. <i>The Refuge, River, and Rock of the church,</i>	317
26. <i>The good Physician,</i>	318
27. <i>The Lord is my portion,</i>	319
28. <i>Humbled and silenced by mercy,</i>	320
29. <i>They shall be mine, saith the Lord,</i>	321
30. <i>The beggar,</i>	ib.
31. <i>The leper,</i>	323
32. <i>A sick soul,</i>	324
33. <i>What think ye of Christ,</i>	325
34. <i>Peter sinning and repenting,</i>	326
35. <i>The heart taken,</i>	327
36. <i>The</i>	

36. <i>The barren fig-tree,</i>	-	-	328
37. <i>The rebel's surrender to grace,</i>	-	-	329
38. <i>Contentment,</i>	-	-	330
39. <i>Love-tokens,</i>	-	-	331
40. <i>A new-year's thought and prayer,</i>	-	-	332
41. <i>Elijah's prayer,</i>	-	-	333
42. <i>Gospel-privileges,</i>	-	-	334
43. <i>Looking at the cross,</i>	-	-	335
44. <i>The word more precious than gold,</i>	-	-	336
45. <i>On the commencement of hostilities in Ame- rica,</i>	-	-	337
46. <i>On the death of a believer,</i>	-	-	338
47. <i>The tolling bell,</i>	-	-	339
48. <i>Lightening in the night,</i>	-	-	ib.
49. <i>On the eclipse of the moon, July 30. 1776.</i>	-	-	340
50. <i>Moon-light,</i>	-	-	341
51. <i>The bee saved from the spider,</i>	-	-	342
52. <i>The garden,</i>	-	-	343
53. <i>Why should I complain,</i>	-	-	344
54. <i>Prayer answered by crosses,</i>	-	-	345
55. <i>I will trust, and not be afraid,</i>	-	-	346
56. <i>Questions to unbelief,</i>	-	-	347
57. <i>Hear what he has done for my soul,</i>	-	-	349
58. <i>True and false zeal,</i>	-	-	350
59. <i>Praise for redeeming love,</i>	-	-	ib.



318	The power of the
319	The power of the
320	The power of the
321	The power of the
322	The power of the
323	The power of the
324	The power of the
325	The power of the
326	The power of the
327	The power of the
328	The power of the
329	The power of the
330	The power of the
331	The power of the
332	The power of the
333	The power of the
334	The power of the
335	The power of the
336	The power of the
337	The power of the
338	The power of the
339	The power of the
340	The power of the
341	The power of the
342	The power of the
343	The power of the
344	The power of the
345	The power of the
346	The power of the
347	The power of the
348	The power of the
349	The power of the
350	The power of the
351	The power of the
352	The power of the
353	The power of the
354	The power of the
355	The power of the
356	The power of the
357	The power of the
358	The power of the
359	The power of the
360	The power of the
361	The power of the
362	The power of the
363	The power of the
364	The power of the
365	The power of the
366	The power of the
367	The power of the
368	The power of the
369	The power of the
370	The power of the
371	The power of the
372	The power of the
373	The power of the
374	The power of the
375	The power of the
376	The power of the
377	The power of the
378	The power of the
379	The power of the
380	The power of the
381	The power of the
382	The power of the
383	The power of the
384	The power of the
385	The power of the
386	The power of the
387	The power of the
388	The power of the
389	The power of the
390	The power of the
391	The power of the
392	The power of the
393	The power of the
394	The power of the
395	The power of the
396	The power of the
397	The power of the
398	The power of the
399	The power of the
400	The power of the



BOOK I  
Of the First Period of Christianity.

REVIEW  
OF  
ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

Vol. III.

A



## B O O K I.

### Of the First Period of Christianity.

#### CHAP.

1. The general state of the Heathens and Jews at the time of our Lord's Incarnation.
2. The character and genius of the Gospel, as taught and exemplified by himself.
3. The true grounds of the opposition he met with, and the offences and objections urged by his enemies to prejudice the people against him.
4. The state of his Church and Disciples, previous to the day of Pentecost, after his Ascension.

## CHAPTER I.

*The wisdom and goodness of God conspicuous in the period assigned for Christ's appearance. Illustrated by a summary view of the state of mankind, before and at the time of his birth.*

WHEN the first man had fallen from the happiness and perfection of his creation, had rendered himself corrupt and miserable, and was only capable of transmitting depravity and misery to his posterity, the goodness of God immediately revealed a remedy adequate to his distressed situation. The Lord Jesus was promised under the character of *the seed of the woman*, as the great deliverer who should repair the breach of sin, and retrieve the ruin of human nature. From that hour, he became the object of faith, and the author of salvation, to every soul that aspired to communion with God, and earnestly sought deliverance from guilt and wrath. This discovery of a Saviour was, in the first ages, veiled under types and shadows; and, like the advancing day, became brighter and brighter, as the time of his manifestation drew near: but it was always sufficient to sustain the hopes, and to purify the hearts of the true worshippers of God. That the patriarchs and prophets of old were in this sense Christians, that is to say, that their joy and trust centered in the promised Messiah, and that the faith, whereby they overcame the world, was the same faith in the same Lord with ours, is unanswerably proved by St Paul in several passages (1):

(1) Rom. iv.; Gal. iii. 16. 17.



particularly in Heb. xi. where he at large insists on the characters of Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, and Moses, to illustrate this very point.

At length (1), in the fulness of time, as the apostle speaks, the time marked out by the ancient prophecies, the time to which all the previous dispensations of Divine Providence had an express reference and subordination, and which was peculiarly suited to place the manifold wisdom of God, and the truths of divine revelation, in the clearest light; the long-expected Messiah appeared, as the surety and Saviour of sinners, to accomplish the great work of redemption. For these purposes, he was born of a virgin, of the family of David, at the town of Bethlehem, as the prophets had foretold. This great event took place in the 27th year of the reign of Augustus Cæsar, computing from the battle of Actium; (2) and, according to the most received authorities, almost 1920 years from the calling of Abraham, and about 4000 from the creation.

The pride and vanity of man, which prompt him to cavil with his Maker, and to dispute when he ought to obey, have often objected to the expedience and propriety of this appointment. It has been asked, If Christ's appearance was so absolutely necessary, why was it so long deferred? Or if mankind could do without him for so many thousand years, why not longer, or for ever? In attempting a solution of this difficulty, some well-meaning persons, from a too earnest desire to render the counsels of God more acceptable to the narrow apprehensions of unsanctified reason, have given up the ground they ought to have maintained, and made such concessions, as (if extended to

(1) Gal. iv. 4. (2) Bossuet, Univ. Hist. Prideaux, Connect.

their



their just consequence) would amount to all that the most hardened infidel can desire. The most direct and proper answer is suggested by St Paul on a similar occasion, Who art thou, O man, that repliest against God \*? That the will and wisdom of the Creator should direct and limit the inquiries of his rational creatures, is a principle highly consonant to right reason itself. And there can hardly be a stronger proof of human depravity, than that this argument is so generally esteemed inconclusive. But waving this, a sufficient answer may be made, from the premisses already advanced.

God was not a debtor to sinful men. He might have left them all to perish, as he left the sinning angels, without the least impeachment of his goodness; but his mercy interposed, and he spared not his own Son, that sinners might be saved in a way consistent with his perfections. But though, in *compassion to us*, he provided the means of salvation, we cannot wonder that, in *justice to himself*, he laid the plan in such a manner as might most clearly illustrate the riches of his own grace, and most effectually humble and silence the pardoned offenders; to prevent their boasting and trusting in themselves, and to give them the most affecting views of his unmerited goodness. We may therefore humbly conceive one reason, why Christ was no sooner manifested in the flesh, to have been, that the nature, effects, and inveteracy of sin, might be more evidently known, and the insufficiency of

\* Rom. ix. 20. It is observable in this passage, that the apostle foresees and states the great objection which would be made to his doctrine, but does not attempt to answer it any farther, than by referring all to the will of him who formed the whole mats, and has a right to dispose of it. Had succeeding writers and teachers imitated his example, declared the plain truth in plain words, and avoided vain and endless reasonings, how many offences would have been prevented!



every other means of relief demonstrated by the universal experience of many ages.

What is the history of mankind but a diffusive exemplification of the scripture-doctrines concerning the dreadful nature and effects of sin, and the desperate wickedness of the heart of man! We are accustomed from our infancy to call evil good, and good evil. We acquire an early prejudice in favour of heroes, conquerors, and philosophers. But if we consider the facts recorded in the annals of antiquity, divested from the false glare and studied ornaments with which the vanity of writers has disguised them, they will afford but a dark and melancholy review. The spirit of the first-born Cain appears to have influenced the whole human race. The peace of nations, cities, and families, has been continually disturbed by the bitter effects of ambition, avarice, revenge, cruelty, and lust. The general knowledge of God was soon lost out of the world; and, when *his* fear was set aside, the restraints, dictated by the interests of civil society, were always too weak to prevent the most horrid evils. In a word, the character of all ages and countries before the coming of Christ (a few excepted, where the light of revelation was afforded) is strongly though briefly drawn by St Paul (1). *Foolish and insatuated to the highest degree, disobedient to the plainest dictates of nature, reason, and conscience, Enslaved \* to divers dishonourable lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and abominable in themselves, and incessantly hating and worrying one another.*

It would be more easy than pleasant to make out

\* *Enslaved.* So the original term may be emphatically rendered.—At the controul of various and opposite passions, hurried about by them all in their turns, and incapable of resisting or resisting the motions of any.

(1) Titus, iii. 3.



this charge by a long induction of particulars; and, without having recourse to the most savage and uncultivated, the proof might be rested on the character of the two most celebrated and civilized nations, and at the time of their greatest refinement, the Greeks and the Romans. St Paul has given us the result of their boasted improvements \* in arts and sciences, in war and commerce, in philosophy and literature: and he says no more than is abundantly confirmed by their own poets and historians. Notwithstanding the marks and fruits of fine taste and exalted genius which were found amongst them, they were habitually abandoned to the grossest vices. Devoted to the most stupid *idolatry*, they worshipped the works of their own hands; nay, erected altars to their follies and passions. Their moral characters were answerable to their principles. Without *natural affection*, they frequently exposed their helpless infants to perish. They burned with *lusts*, not to be named without horror; and this not the meaner sort only, or in secret, but some of their finest spirits and most admired writers (1) were sunk so low, as to glory in their shame, and openly avow themselves the disgrace of humanity. In their public concerns, notwithstanding their specious pretences, they were *covenant breakers*, *implacable*, *unmerciful*, and *unjust*. Guilty of the severest oppression, while they boasted highly of equity and moderation †, as was particularly mani-

\* Rom. i. 21.—32. An affecting comment on this passage might be collected from Horace, Juvenal, Sallust, and Suetonius.

† See Acts, xxvii. 42. The soldiers would have killed all the prisoners, right or wrong, rather than one of them should have a possibility of escaping: and in this, without doubt, they consulted their own safety, and the spirit of their laws. Why, then, were the Romans so much admired? Could there be a greater proof of cruelty and injustice found amongst the most barbarous nations, than to leave prisoners, who might possibly be innocent, exposed to the wanton caprice of their keepers?

(1) See Virgil, Eclog. 2.



feſted on the deſtruction of Carthage and Corinth : two memorable inſtances of the ſpirit of a government ſo undeſervedly admired in after times. And as the Roman power, ſo the Grecian eloquence, was perverted to the worſt purpoſes ; to palliate crimes, to conſecrate folly, and to recommend falſehood under the guiſe and ſemblance of truth.

Such was the character of the people, reputed the wiſeſt and the beſt of the Heathens ; and particularly ſo at the birth of Chriſt, when the Roman empire was at the ſummit of authority and ſplendor. A long experience had ſhewn the general depravity to be not only inveterate, but incurable. For during ſeveral preceding ages, a reformation had been deſired and attempted. The principal leaders in this commendable deſign were called philoſophers ; and many of their writings are ſtill extant. It muſt be acknowledged, that ſome of them had a faint view of ſeveral important truths : but as they neither knew the cauſe and extent of the diſorder, nor the only effectual remedy, they met with little ſucceſs. Their ſchemes were various, inconfiſtent, and even oppoſite ; and each party more ſucceſsful in oppoſing the fallacy of other ſects, than in maintaining their own. Thoſe who came neareſt the truth, and were in earneſt to promote it, were very few. Even theſe were ignorant of ſome things abſolutely neceſſary to the attainment of the deſired end. The beſt of them were reſtrained by the fear of men, and a regard to eſtabliſhed cuſtoms. What they *could* and *did* propound, they had no ſufficient authority, or influence, to impreſs upon the conſciences of men. And if, in a few inſtances, they ſeemed to ſucceed, the advantage was only imaginary. Where they prevailed on any to relinquish intemperance, they made them full amends by gratifying their pride. The buſineſs paſſed from hand to hand,



hand, from sect to sect, but all to no purpose. After innumerable disputations, and volumes, concerning the supreme good, the beauty of virtue, the fitness of things, and other high-sounding topics; they left matters as bad or worse than they found them. They could not effectually inculcate their doctrine upon a single village or family. Nay, they were but half persuaded themselves, and could not act up to their own principles\*, when they most needed their support.

A still more affecting view of the degeneracy of human nature we have in the history of the Israelites, whom God was pleased to set apart from the rest of mankind, for several important purposes: He revealed himself to this people, when they were groaning under a heavy bondage in Egypt, from which they had neither spirit nor power to deliver themselves: he freed them from their captivity, by a series of illustrious miracles: he led them through the sea and the desert: he honoured them with the symbols of his immediate presence; was a wall of fire round about them, and a glory in the midst of them: he spoke to them with an audible voice, and fed them with manna from heaven: he put them in possession of a good land, and fought against all their enemies. Might it not have been expected, that a people so highly favoured and honoured, should have been obedient and thankful? Some of them were so: his grace always preserved a spiritual people amongst them, whose faith in the Messiah taught them the true meaning of the Levitical law, and inspired them with zeal and sincerity in the service of God. But the bulk of the nation was always refractory and disobedient. While in the wilderness, they mur-

\* Witness the prevarication of Socrates, and the irresolution of Cicero, towards the close of their lives.

mured



mured against the Lord upon every new difficulty. Within a few days after the law had been delivered in flames and thunder from the top of Sinai, they formed a molten calf to worship, and would have made a captain who might lead them back into Egypt. They despised the good land, therefore their carcases \* fell in the wilderness. Their posterity retained the same spirit: they learned the ways of the Heathen, whom the Lord cast out before them: they adopted every idolatrous practice; they transgressed every divine command. During a long succession of warnings, chastisements, and deliverances, they became worse and worse; so that, in Jeremiah's time, they equalled or exceeded the Heathens around them in ignorance and wickedness. They mocked the messengers of God, despised his words, and misused his prophets; till his wrath arose against them, and there was no remedy. At length their land was laid waste, Jerusalem burnt, the greater part of the people destroyed, and the remainder carried captives into Chaldea.

Upon their return from captivity, they seemed, for a little while, to retain a sense of their duty, and of the judgements they had suffered. But all was soon forgot. Their wickedness now put on a new form, and discovered the evil of the heart of man in a new point of view. They were no longer prone to idolatry. They avoided the most di-

\* 1 Cor. x. 5. They were overthrown in the wilderness, *κατεσπαθίσαν*. They fell in heaps, like grass before the scythe; and this, after all the great things they had seen and been partakers of. Of the many hundred thousands who were above twenty years old when they were delivered from Egypt, only two persons were spared to enter the promised land: A striking admonition to us, not to rest in the participation of external privileges of any kind: for these people had seen the Lord's wonders at the Red sea, had rejoiced in the destruction of the Egyptians, and been fed with manna from heaven.

stant



stant appearance of it with scrupulous exactness, and professed the highest attachment to God. They boasted themselves in his law; and, from a presumption that they were his peculiar people, they despised and hated the rest of mankind. It is not our present concern, closely to follow their history. Let it suffice to say, that, by substituting a regard to the letter of the law, in the place of spiritual obedience, and by presuming to multiply their own inventions and traditions \*, and to hold them no less binding than the positive commands of God; they, by degrees, attained to a pitch of impiety unknown to former times: and which was so much the more offensive and abominable, as it was covered with the mask of religion, and accompanied with a claim to superior sanctity.

Pride, hypocrisy, and interest, divided them into sects; and the contests of each party for superiority threw the state into frequent commotions. Their intrigues at length brought upon them the Roman power. The city was taken by Pompey; and though they afterwards retained a shadow of liberty, their government was determined from that time by the will of the conquerors. At length Herod, a foreigner, obtained it. In his reign CHRIST was born.

Thus the state of mankind, before the coming of Christ, proved, with the fullest evidence, the necessity of his interposition. And, in the mean

\* See one instance, Matth. xv. 5. The expression is rather obscure; but the sense is, "What you might expect from me for your support, I have put out of my own power; it is devoted to the service of God and the temple." And teachers allowed this to be a legal exemption. Any man, who would pay handsomely to the priests and the temple, might treat his parents as he pleased. Thus they set aside the express command of God, by their own authority, and for their own advantage. The same dispensing, commuting, engrossing spirit has too often appeared in the Christian church.

time,



time, the world had not been left utterly helpless and hopeless. His future advent had been revealed from the beginning; and by faith in that revelation a remnant had subsisted in every age, who had triumphed over the general evil, and maintained the cause of God and truth. It was not necessary to the salvation of *these*, that he should have been manifested sooner; for they beheld his day afar off, and rejoiced in his name. With respect to *others*, destitute of divine faith, his incarnation would have had the same effect at any period as it had on multitudes who actually saw him in the flesh, but, offended with the meanness of his circumstances, and the great honours he vindicated to himself, rejected him with disdain.

But farther: The late appearance of Christ in the world gave room for the full accomplishment of the prophecies concerning him, which had been repeated at different times with increasing clearness and precision; insomuch, that the time, place, and every circumstance of his birth, life, and death, had been distinctly foretold. Thus the truth and authority of the Old Testament were confirmed, and the wisdom, power, and providence of God, over-ruling and directing the contingencies of human affairs, to produce this grand event in its determinate period, were displayed to the highest advantage. And as the state of the *moral* world made his presence highly necessary, so God, in due time, disposed the *political* state of mankind in such a manner as to prepare the way for a speedy and general publication of the gospel through the world.

It would be pleasing to consider how the rise and fall and change of empires were made successively subservient to introduce the kingdom of Jesus. But this would lead me beyond my present bounds. I can only just hint at two or three events,



vents, which had a more general influence. The *first* is, The rapid progress of Alexander; whose extensive conquests, divided amongst his successors, laid the foundation of four powerful monarchies, and opened an intercourse between countries till then unknown to each other. By this means, the Greek tongue became familiar and common to many nations; and, soon after, the Hebrew scriptures were translated into that language, and the prophecies concerning the Messiah were laid open to the Gentiles. To this may be added the several dispersions of the Jews; who, upon various occasions, had been settled in almost every considerable city under the Heathen governments. By their traditions and prophecies, imperfectly understood, a general expectation had been raised of some extraordinary deliverer who would shortly appear. Lastly, by the growth of the Roman empire many nations and people who were before acquainted by means of one common language, became more closely united under one dominion. Every province had a necessary connection with Rome, and Rome was the centre and resort of the greatest part of the then habitable world.

As to the Jews, many things concurred to animate their wishes and expectations of the Messiah's approach. The prophecies were in their hands. Many of their wise men were apprised, that the term of seventy weeks, spoken of by Daniel, was drawing to a period. The sceptre seemed departing from Judah: they groaned under a foreign yoke; from which they vainly imagined the Messiah would set them free, and give them in their turn a temporal dominion over the nations of the earth. Though this mistake prompted them to reject Christ, when he preached a deliverance unsuitable to their worldly notions, yet it made them solicitous and eager for the appearance of the per-



son on whom their hopes were fixed. A few amongst them, however, better instructed in the true meaning of the prophecies, were secretly waiting in the exercises of faith and prayer for the consolation of Israel (1).

From this general view of the moral and political state of mankind, and the leading designs of divine revelation and providence, previous to the birth of Christ, we may conclude, that the time fixed on, from before the foundation of the world, for his actual exhibition amongst men, was not an arbitrary, but a wise and gracious appointment. A determination admirably suited to place the most important truths in the strongest light. In this way the depravity, misery, and helplessness of man, the mercy of God, and the truth of the scriptures, were unquestionably proved to all succeeding times. The necessity of a Saviour was felt and acknowledged; and the suitability, all-sufficiency, and condescension of Jesus, when he undertook and accomplished the great designs in which his love engaged him, were more strongly illustrated by the preceding contrast. He knew the whole human race were sinners, rebels, enemies against God. He knew the terms, the price of our redemption, that he must obey, suffer, weep, and die: Yet he came. He emptied himself of his glory and honour, and took on him the form of a servant, to bring the glad tidings of salvation to men. In effect, the gospel of Christ soon appeared to be the great *desideratum*, and completely redressed the evils which philosophy had given up as desperate. The genius and characteristic marks of this gospel will be considered in the following chapter.

(1) Luke, ii. 3.



## C H A P. II.

*The character and genius of the gospel, as taught and exemplified by Christ.*

A Succinct history of the life of our Lord and Saviour is no part of our plan. This the inspired evangelists have performed with the highest advantage and authority; and their writings (thro' the mercy of God) are generally known and read in our own tongue. It will be sufficient for me to select a few passages from them, to explain and confirm the several points I have proposed to treat of in this book, as principles whereon to ground our observations on the spirit and conduct of after-times.

At present I propose to state the true character and genius of his doctrine. This may seem a digression from my main design. But as I shall often have occasion to speak of the gospel, and the opposition it has met with, it will not be improper, in the first place, to exhibit a general idea of what we mean by the gospel, especially as the professed followers of Christ have been and still are not a little divided upon the point.

We may describe the gospel to be—*A divine revelation in the person of Jesus Christ, discovering the misery of fallen man by sin, and the means of his complete recovery by the free grace of God, thro' faith, unto holiness and happiness.* The explication and proof of these particulars, from our Lord's express declarations, and the tenor of his conduct, will sufficiently point out the principal marks and characters of his gospel. But before we enter upon this, two things may be premised.

1. Though I confine myself to the writings of



the evangelists in this disquisition, yet it should be remembered, that whilst our Lord was visibly conversant with men, he did not ordinarily discover the whole system of his doctrine in express terms. He spoke to the multitude, for the most part, in parables (1), and was not forward to proclaim himself the Messiah upon every occasion (2). And even in his more intimate discourses with his disciples, he taught them with a wise and gracious accommodation to their circumstances and weakness \*. The full explanation of many things, he referred to the time when, having accomplished his wish, and returned victorious and triumphant into heaven, he should send down, according to his promise, the Holy Spirit, to enlighten and comfort his people. Then (3), and not before, they fully understood the meaning of all they had seen and heard, while he was with them.

2. The doctrine of the gospel is not like a mathematical problem, which conveys precisely the same degree of truth and certainty to every one that understands the terms. If so, all believers would be equally enlightened, who enjoy the common privilege of the written word. But there is, in fact, an amazing variety in this respect. Where this doctrine is truly understood, though in the lowest degree, it inspires the soul with a supreme love to Jesus, and a trust in him for salvation.

\* John, xvi. 12. 25. Our Lord taught his disciples gradually; their knowledge advanced as the light, or (according to his own beautiful simile) first the blade, then the ear; first green corn, then fully ripe. He considered their difficulties, he made allowances for their infirmities. It is to be wished his example was followed by all who teach in his name. Some are so hasty, they expect to teach to others in one discourse, or interview, all that they have attained themselves by the study and experience of many years.

(1) Matth. xiii. 10. 12.

(2) Matth. xvi. 20.

(3) Mark, ix. 10.; John, ii. 22.

And



And those who understand it best, have not yet received all the evidence, comfort, and influence, from it, which it is capable of affording. The riches of grace and wisdom in this dispensation are unsearchable (1) and immense, imparted in different measures, and increased from time to time, according to the good pleasure (2) of the Spirit of God, who furnishes his people with light and strength proportioned to their exigencies, situation, and the services or trials he calls them to; not without respect to the degree of their diligence, obedience, and simplicity, in waiting upon him. For these reasons, it is not to be expected, that every one who serves God with his spirit in the gospel of his Son, should have exactly the same views of this sublime subject. Neither do I presume to think myself capable of displaying it in its full light and beauty. I desire, therefore, to write with candour, and intreat a candid perusal, as conscious of my infirmities, and the imperfections necessarily attending the human mind, in this present state of things. Yet I am not afraid to express my just confidence, that I shall advance no principle, as a part of the gospel-doctrine, which does not assuredly belong to it.

I now proceed to explain and confirm the definition I have given of the gospel.

1. It is a divine revelation, a discovery of truths, which, though of the highest moment, could have been known no other way. That God will forgive sin is beyond the power of unassisted reason to prove. The prevailing custom of sacrifices is indeed founded upon such a hope; but this practice was, without doubt, derived from revelation, for reason could not have suggested such an expedient. And those among the Heathens, whether

(1) Ephes. iii. 8.

(2) 1 Cor. xii. 11.



priests or philosophers, who spoke of forgiveness of sin, knew but little what sin was. Revelation was needful to discover sin in its true nature and demerit; and where this is known, the awakened and wounded conscience is not easily persuaded, that a just and holy God will pardon iniquity: so likewise the immortality of the soul, after all the fine things said upon the subject, remained a problematical point among the Heathen. Their best arguments, though conclusive to us, were not so to themselves. When \* they laid aside their books, and returned to the common affairs of life, they forgot the force of their own demonstrations. But the gospel of Christ is an express, complete, and infallible revelation, as he himself often assured his hearers (1).

And as the subject-matter of the gospel contained in the New Testament, is a revelation from God, so it is only by a divine revelation, that what is there read or heard can be truly understood. This is an offensive assertion, but must not be omitted when the question is concerning the marks and characters of Christ's doctrine. Thus when Peter made that noble confession, "Thou art Christ the son of the living God (2)," our Lord answers, "Blessed art thou Simon, for flesh and blood hath not revealed this to thee, but my Father which is in heaven." If Peter could read, and had the scriptures to peruse, these were advantages derived from flesh and blood, from his birth, parents and teachers; advantages which

\* Cicero frankly confesses this: *Nescio quomodo, dum lego, assentior; cum posui librum, et mecum ipse de immortalitate animarum cœpi cogitare, assentio omnis illa elabitur.* *Tusc. Quæst. lib. i.*

(1) John, vii. 16. and viii. 26. (2) Matth. xvi. 16. 17.

the



the Scribes and Pharisees, our Lord's most inveterate enemies, enjoyed in common with him. The difference lay in a revelation of the truth to his heart. As it is said in another place, "Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and revealed them unto babes \*."

2. It is a revelation in the person of Jesus Christ. As a revelation it stands distinguished from all false religions, and as revealed in the person of Jesus, it is distinguished from all former dispensations of the true God, who, in time past, had spoken by the prophets, but was pleased in those last days to speak unto us by his Son. The law was given by Moses, both to enforce the necessity of an universal sinless obedience, and to point out *the efficacy* of a better mediator; but grace and truth, *grace answerable to the sinners guilt and misery*, and truth, and the full accomplishment of all its typical services, came by Jesus Christ. All the grand peculiarities of the gospel centre in this point, the constitution of the person of Christ (1). In the knowledge of him standeth our eternal life. And though our Lord, on some occasions, refused to answer the captious questions of his enemies, and expressed himself so as to leave his hearers in suspense, yet at other times he clearly asserted his own just rights and honours, and proposed himself as the supreme object of love, trust, and worship, the fountain of grace and power, the resurrection, life, and happiness of all believers.

\* That babes should be admitted to this knowledge, and express a certainty, where the wise are all perplexity and darkness, is extremely mortifying to human pride. But are not these the words of Christ? How arrogant, how dangerous must it be, to be displeased with that dispensation at which he rejoiced!

(1) Col. ii. 3. 9; John, xvii. 3.

That



That he vindicated to himself those characters and prerogatives which incommunicably belong to God, is evident from the texts referred to. He (1) was a judge of the thoughts and intents of the heart : He forgave sins : He adopted the style of supreme majesty \* : His wonderful works were proof of an almighty power : He restored sight, health, and life, with a word (2) : he controuled the elements (3), and shewed himself (4) Lord of quick and dead, angels and devils ; and both his enemies and his friends understood his claim. The Jews attempted to stone him (5) for making himself equal to God ; and he received from Thomas the most expresse and solemn ascription of deity that can be offered from a creature to his Creator (6).

Yet all this glory was veiled. The Word was made flesh : he assumed the human nature, and shared in all its infirmities, sin excepted. He was born of a woman ; he passed through the states of infancy, childhood, and youth, and gradually increased in wisdom and stature (7). He was often, yea always afflicted : he endured (8) hunger, thirst,

\* John, viii. 38. ; John, xiv. 9. " He that hath seen me, hath seen my Father." Which of all the creatures of God dare use these words ? God, in the strict sense, is invisible and inaccessible ; but he communicates with his creatures, through Christ his Son, without whom he cannot be seen or known at all. We cannot enjoy any spiritual, clear, and comfortable views of God, unless our thoughts fix upon the man Christ Jesus : he is the door and the veil to the holy of holies ; and there is no coming to the Father by any other way.

- (1) Matth. ix. 2. 3.      (2) Matth. viii. 3. 9. 30. ; John, iv. 53.  
 (3) Matth. xiv. 25. ; Mark, iv. 39.  
 (4) John, xi. 25. 44. ; Luke, iv. 34. ; Matth. iv. 11. 26. 53.  
 (5) John, v. 18. x. 33.      (6) John, xx. 28.  
 (7) Luke, ii. 52.      (8) Mark, xi. 12. ; John, iv. 6. 7.

and



and weariness: he (1) sighed, he wept, he groaned, he bled, he died; but, amidst all, he was spotless and undefiled. He (2) repelled the temptations of Satan; he appealed to his most watchful enemies for his integrity; he rendered universal unceasing obedience to the will of God, and completely fulfilled the whole law. In him the perfection of wisdom and goodness shined forth. He burned with love to God, with compassion to men; a compassion which he freely extended to the most necessitous, and the most unworthy. He returned good for evil, wept (3) for his enemies, prayed for his murderers. Such was his character, a divine person in the human nature, God (4) manifest in the flesh. And from this union, all he did, and all he said, derived a dignity, authority, and efficacy, which rendered him every way worthy to be the Teacher, Exemplar, Lord, and Saviour, of mankind.

3. In the person and sufferings of Christ, there is at once a discovery of the misery of fallen man, and the means of his complete recovery. It has already been observed, that the full explication of these truths was deferred till after his resurrection; and the subsequent writings of his apostles are useful to give us a complete view of the cause, design, and benefits of his passion. At present we confine ourselves to his own words. He frequently (5) taught the necessity and certainty of his sufferings; he spoke of them as the great design of his incarnation, that it was by this means he should draw (6) all unto himself; that he was, on this account especially, the object of his Father's compla-

(1) Mark, vii. 34.; John, xi. 35. 38.; Luke, xxii. 44.

(2) Matth. iv. 1. 12.; John, viii. 46. xiv. 30. xvii. 4.

(3) Luke, xix. 41. xxiii. 34.

(4) 1 Tim. iii. 16.

(5) Matth. xvi. 21. xx. 28.

(6) John, xii. 32. x. 17.

cency,



cency, because he voluntarily substituted himself to die for his people. He enforced the necessity (1) of believing on him in this view; and applied to himself the prophecies of the Old Testament (2), which speak to the same purpose. Isaiah had foretold, that the Lord would lay upon him the iniquities of us all; that he was to be wounded for our transgressions, and by his stripes we should be healed. Here then we see the manifold wisdom of God; his inexpressible love to us commended; his mercy exalted, in the salvation of sinners; his truth and justice vindicated, in the full satisfaction for sin exacted from the Surety; his glorious holiness, and opposition to all evil; and his invariable faithfulness to his threatenings and his promises. Considered in this light, our Saviour's passion is the most momentous, instructive, and comfortable theme that can affect the heart of man. But if his substitution and proper atonement are denied, the whole is unintelligible. We can assign no sufficient reason why a person of his excellence was abandoned to such miseries and indignities; nor can we account for that agony and distress which seized him at the prospect of what was coming upon him. It would be highly injurious to his character, to suppose he was thus terrified by the apprehension of death or bodily pain, when so many frail and sinful men have encountered death, armed with the severest tortures, with far less emotion.

Here, as in a glass, we see the evil of sin, and the misery of man. The greatness of the disorder may be rationally inferred from the greatness of the means necessary to remove it. Would we learn the depth of the fall of man, let us consider

(1) John, iii. 14. — 18.

(2) Luke, xxiv. 25. — 27; Is. liii.



the depth of the humiliation of Jesus to restore him. Behold the beloved of God, perfectly spotless and holy, yet made an example of the severest vengeance; prostrate and agonizing in the garden; enduring the vilest insults from wicked men; torn with whips, and nails, and thorns; suspended, naked, wounded, and bleeding upon the cross; and there heavily complaining, that God had for a season forsaken him. Sin was the cause of all his anguish. He stood in the place of sinners; and therefore was not spared. Not any, or all the evils which the world has known, afford such proof of the dreadful effects, and detestable nature of sin, as the knowledge of Christ crucified. Sin had rendered the case of mankind so utterly desperate, that nothing less than the blood and death of Jesus could retrieve it. If any other expedient could have sufficed, his prayer, that the bitter cup might pass from him, would surely have been answered. But what his enemies intended as the keenest reproach, his redeemed people will for ever repeat as the expression of his highest praise: "He saved others, himself he cannot save (1)." Justice would admit no inferior atonement; love would not give up the cause of fallen ruined *man*. Being therefore determined to save others, he could not, consistently with this gracious design and undertaking, deliver himself.

Again, the means and certainty of a salvation proportioned to the guilt and misery of sinners, and a happiness answerable to the utmost capacity of the soul of man, are revealed in the same astonishing dispensation of divine love. When Jesus was baptized, he was pointed out by a voice from heaven: "This is my beloved Son, in whom (or for whose sake) I am well pleased (2)." He af-

(1) Luke, xxiii. 35.

(2) Matth. iii. 17.

terwards



terwards proclaimed his own (1) authority and sufficiency, that all things were delivered into his hands, and invited every weary heavy-laden (2) soul to seek to him for refreshment and peace. He gave the most express assurances, that whoever applied to him should in no case be rejected. He mentioned his death and sufferings (3) as the principal circumstance that should engage the hearts, and confirm the hopes, of sinners. He gave repeated promises, that those who believe in him shall never perish (4); that neither force nor fraud should frustrate his intentions in their favour; that after his ascension, he would send the Holy Spirit (5) to supply his bodily presence; and that his power, grace, and providence, should be with his people to the end of the world; finally, that he would manage their concerns in heaven (6), and at length return to take them to himself, that they might be with him for ever, to behold and to share his glory.

4. In this revelation God has illustriously displayed the glory of his free grace. The miserable and guilty, who find themselves without either plea or hope, but what the gospel proclaims by Christ, are invited without exception, and received without condition. Though they have been the vilest offenders, they are freely accepted in the Beloved; and none of their iniquities shall be remembered any more: on the contrary, the most respectable characters amongst men are declared to be of no avail in point of acceptance with God; but in this respect all the race of Adam are upon equal terms, and must be involved in the same ruin, without an

(1) Matth. xi. 27. 28.

(2) John, vi. 37.

(3) John, xii. 32. 33.

(4) John, x. 38.

(5) John, xvi. 7. xiii. 14.; Matth. xxviii. 20.

(6) John, xiv. 2.; xiii. 14.

absolute



absolute dependence on the great Mediator. This is an illustrious peculiarity of the gospel, which the proud fallen nature of man cannot but resist and find fault with, till the conscience is truly affected with the guilt and demerit of sin. The whole tenor of our Saviour's ministry was suited to depreciate the most specious attainments of those who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and to encourage all who felt and confessed themselves to be miserable sinners: *Parcere subiectis, et debellare superbos*. This was a chief cause of the opposition he met with in his own person, and has awakened the hatred and dislike of the bulk of mankind against his doctrine ever since. It is necessary, therefore, to confirm it by proofs which cannot be evaded by any who profess to acknowledge him to be a teacher sent from God.

He was daily conversant with many who were wise and righteous in their own eyes; and we find he omits no opportunity to expose and condemn their pretensions. He spake one parable purposely to persons of this stamp (1), and describes a Pharisee boasting of his observance of the law: He paid tithes, he fasted, he prayed; he was not chargeable with adultery or extortion; he could say more for himself than many can who affect to be thought religious: but the poor publican, (though despicable in his sight), who, conscious of his unworthiness, durst not lift up his eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, and cried for mercy, was in a happier and safer condition than the other with all his boasted obedience.

Another remarkable instance is that of the ru-

(1) Luke, xviii. 9. — 14.



ler (1), who accosted our Lord in a respectful manner, asking him, What he should do to inherit eternal life? His address was becoming; his inquiry seemed sincere; and the character he gave of himself was such as men, who see not the heart, might have judged exemplary and praise-worthy. When our Lord referred him to the precepts of the law, he answered, that he had kept them all from his youth. Yet one thing, we read, was wanting. What could this one thing be, which rendered so fair a character of no value? We may collect it from the event: He wanted a deep sense of his need of a Saviour. If he had been possessed of this one thing, he would willingly have relinquished all to follow Jesus. But, ignorant of the spirituality of the law, he trusted to a defective obedience; and the love of the world prevailing in his heart, he chose rather to part with Christ than with his possessions.

On the other hand, how readily our Lord received sinners, notorious sinners, who were vile to a proverb, appears from the remarkable account given by St Luke (2), of a woman whose character had been so infamous, that the Pharisee wondered that Jesus could permit her to touch him. But though a great sinner, she found great forgiveness; therefore she loved much, and wept much\*. She had nothing to say for herself; but Jesus espoused her cause, and pronounced her pardon. He likewise silenced the proud caviller by a parable,

\* She washed his feet with tears; ἤρξατο βρῖχειν. She began to rain tears upon his feet: her head was waters, and her eyes fountains: to receive a free pardon of many sins, a pardon bought with blood, — it is this causes the heart to melt, and the eyes to flow.

(1) Matth. xix. 16.; Luke, xviii. 18.

(2) Luke, vii. 37.

that



that sweetly illustrates the freeness and genuine effect of the grace of God, which can only be possessed or prized by those who see they must perish without it.

And this was the general effect of his preaching. Publicans and sinners thronged to hear him, received his doctrine, and found rest for their souls. As this discrimination gave a general offence, he took occasion to deliver the parable of the prodigal (1); in the former part of which he gives a most endearing view of the grace of God, in pardoning and accepting the most undeserving. He afterwards, in the close, shews the pride, stubbornness, and enmity, of the self-righteous Pharisees, under the character of the *elder brother* \*. While his language and deportment discovered the disobedience and malice of his heart, he pretended that he had never broke his father's commands. The self-condemned sinner, when he first receives hope of pardon, experiences a joy and peace in believing. This is represented by the feast and fatted calf. But the religious orderly brother had never received so much as a kid: he had found no true comfort in all his formal round of duties; and therefore was exceedingly angry that the prodigal should at once obtain those marks of favour which he who

\* It may be objected to this interpretation, That the father speaks to the elder brother in terms of complacency: "Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine." But this is not the only place where our Lord addresses the Pharisees in their own style, according to the opinion they conceived of themselves. Thus, Matth. viii. 12. he says, "The children of the kingdom shall be cast out into utter darkness."—He does not mean those who were truly the children of the kingdom, but those who pretended to be so.

(1) Luke, xv. 11.



had remained with his father had been always a stranger to.

But the capital exemplification of this, and indeed of every doctrine of the gospel, is contained in the account given of the thief upon the cross (1): A passage which has perhaps been more mistaken and misrepresented by commentators, than any other in the New Testament. The grace of God has shone so bright in this instance, that it has dazzled the eyes even of good men. They have attempted to palliate the offender's crime, or at least to suppose, that this was the first fault of the kind he had committed; that perhaps he had been surpris'd into it, and might in other respects have been of a fairer character. They conjecture, that this was the first time he had heard of Jesus; and that there was, not only some sort of merit in his faith and confession under these circumstances, but that the death of Jesus happily coinciding with his own, afforded him an advantage peculiar to himself; and that therefore this was an exempt case, and not to be drawn into a precedent to after times.

If it was my profess'd design to comment upon this malefactor's case, I should consider it in a different light. The nature of his punishment, which was seldom inflict'd but on those who were judg'd the most atrocious criminals, makes it more than probable that he did not suffer for a first offence. Nor was he simply a *thief*. The history of those times abounds with the mischiefs committed by public robbers, who us'd to join in considerable bands for rapine and murder, and commit the greatest excesses. In all likelihood, the malefactors crucified with Jesus were of this sort, accomplices and equals in guilt; and therefore judg'd to die together, receiving (as appears by the criminal's own

(1) Luke, xxiii. 39.—42.

confession



confession on the cross) the just reward of their deeds \*. Here was indeed a fair occasion to shew the sovereignty and triumph of grace, contrasted with the most desperate pitch of obdurate wickedness. To shew, on the one hand, that the compassion and the power of Christ were not diminished, when his sufferings were at the height, and he seemed abandoned to his enemies; and, on the other, the insufficiency of any means to change a sinner's heart, without the powerful efficacy of divine grace. The one malefactor brought at length to deserved punishment, far from repenting of his crimes, regardless of his immediate appearance before God, thought it some relaxation of his torments, to join with the barbarous multitude in reviling Jesus, who hung upon a cross by his side. He was not ignorant that Jesus was put to death for professing himself the Messiah; but he upbraided him with his character, and treated him as an impostor. In this man we see the progress, wages, and effects of sin. His wickedness brought him to a terrible end, and sealed him up under a fatal hardness of heart: so that he died desperate, tho' Jesus Christ was crucified before his eyes †. But his companion was impressed by what he saw: his heart relented; he observed the patience of

\* It seems probable from the history, that these were of Barabbas's gang. They had made an insurrection, committed murder, and were, with their ringleader, convicted and condemned. He, in dishonour to Jesus, was spared, whilst these his accomplices were executed with him.

† Compare Matth. xxvii. 39. How can it be expected, that no more than a constant repetition of Christ's death, should be an invincible means of changing the heart, when the actual sight of his sufferings was attended with so little effect! Sin must be felt as the disease and ruin of the soul, and the sufferings of Jesus acknowledged as the only possible remedy, before we can truly sympathize with him, and say, "I am crucified with Christ."



the divine sufferer; he heard him pray for his murderers; he felt himself miserable, and feared the God with whom he had to do. In this distress he received faith to apply to Jesus; and his prayer was granted, and exceeded. He who sent the fair-spoken ruler away sorrowful, answered the first desire of a malefactor at the point of death: "To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise." This certainly was an instance of free distinguishing grace. Here was salvation bestowed upon one of the vilest sinners, through faith in Jesus, without previous works, or a possibility of performing any. And as such, it is recorded for the encouragement of all who see themselves destitute of righteousness and strength, and that, like the thief on the cross, they have no refuge or hope, but in the free mercy of God through Christ.

5. The medium by which the gospel becomes the power of God unto salvation, is *faith*. By faith we do not mean a *bare assent*, founded upon testimony and rational evidence, *that the facts recorded in the New Testament are true*. A faith of this sort experience proves to be consistent with a wicked life; whereas the gospel-faith purifies the heart, and overcomes the world. Neither do we mean a confidence of the forgiveness of sin, impressed upon the mind in a sudden and instantaneous manner. Faith is indeed founded upon the strongest evidence, and may often be confirmed by ineffable manifestations from the fountain of light and comfort; but the discriminating property of true faith is, "a reliance upon Jesus Christ for all the ends and purposes for which the gospel reveals him;" such as, the pardon of sin, peace of conscience, strength for obedience, and eternal life. It is wrought by the operation of the Holy Spirit, and presupposes a knowledge of him, and of ourselves; of our indigence, and his fulness;  
our



our unworthiness, and his merits; our weakness, and his power. The true believer builds upon the person and word of Christ (1) as the foundation of his hope. He enters by him as the only door (2) to the knowledge, communion, and love of God: he feeds upon him by faith in his heart, with thanksgiving, as the bread of life (3): he embraces his righteousness as the wedding-garment (4), whereby alone he expects admission to the marriage-feast of heaven: he derives all his strength and comfort from his influence, as the branch from the root (5): He intrusts himself to his care, as the wise and good shepherd of his soul (6). Sensible of his own ignorance, defects, and his many enemies, he receives Christ as his teacher, priest, and king (7); obeys his preceptor, confides on his mediation, expects and enjoys his powerful protection. In a word, he renounces all confidence in the flesh (8), and rejoices in Christ Jesus as his Saviour; and thus he attains to worship God in spirit and in truth, is supported through all the conflicts and trials of life, possesses a stable peace in the midst of a changing world, goes on from strength to strength, and is at length made more than conqueror, through him that has loved him. This is the life of faith. The degree and exercise of it is various in different persons, and in the same person at different times, as has been already hinted; but the principle itself is universal, permanent, and efficacious, in all that truly believe; and nothing less than this faith is sufficient to give any man a right to the name of a Christian.

(1) Matth. vii. 24. xvi. 18.

(2) John, x. 9.

(3) John, vi. 54. — 57.

(4) Matth. xxii. 11.; Rom. xiii. 14.

(5) John, xv. 4. 5.

(6) John, x. 14.

(7) John, vi. 68.

(8) Phil. iii. 3.



6. The final cause or great ends of the gospel, respecting man, are (1) holiness and happiness; the complete restoration of the soul to the favour and image of God, or eternal life begun here, to be consummated in glory. What has been already said renders it needless to enlarge upon this head; nor shall we concern ourselves here to vindicate the doctrine we have laid down, from the charge of licentiousness; because it is our professed design, in the progress of this work, to prove, from the history of the church, not only that these principles, when rightly understood, will infallibly produce obedience and submission to the whole will of God, but that these only can do it. Where-ever and whenever the doctrines of free grace and justification by faith have prevailed in the Christian church; and according to the degree of clearness with which they have been enforced, the practical duties of Christianity have flourished in the same proportion. Where-ever they have declined, or been tempered with the reasonings and expedients of men, either from a well meant, though mistaken fear, lest they should be abused, or from a desire to accommodate the gospel, and render it more palatable to the depraved taste of the world, the consequence has always been, an equal declension in practice. So long as the gospel of Christ is maintained without adulteration, it is found sufficient for every valuable purpose; but when the wisdom of man is permitted to add to the perfect work of God, a wide door is opened for innumerable mischiefs:—The divine commands are made void, new inventions are continually taking place, zeal is diverted into a wrong channel, and the greatest stress laid upon things either unnecessary or unwarrantable. Hence perpetual occasion is given for strife,

(1) Matth. i. 21. xxv. 34; John, xvii. 24.

debates,



debates, and divisions, till at length the spirit of Christianity is forgot, and the power of godliness lost, amidst fierce contentions for the form.

To sum up this inquiry in few words : The gospel is a wise and gracious dispensation, equally suited to the necessities of man, and to the perfections of God : it proclaims relief to the miserable, and excludes none but those who exclude themselves : it convinces a sinner, that he is unworthy of the smallest mercy, at the same time that it gives him a confidence to expect the greatest : it cuts off all pretence of glorying in the flesh, but it enables a guilty sinner to glory in God : to them that have no might it increases strength ; it gives eyes to the blind, and feet to the lame ; subdues the enmity of the heart ; shews the nature of sin, the spirituality and sanction of the law, with the fullest evidence ; and, by exhibiting Jesus, as made of God wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption, to all who believe, it makes obedience practicable, easy, and delightful. The constraining love of Christ engages the heart, and every faculty, in his service. His example illustrates and recommends his precepts ; his presence inspires courage and activity under every pressure ; and the prospect of the glory to be revealed is a continual source of joy and peace, which passeth the understanding of the natural man. Thus the gospel filleth the hungry with good things ; but it sendeth the rich and self-sufficient empty away, and leaves the impenitent and unbelieving in a state of aggravated guilt and condemnation.



## C H A P. III.

*Concerning the true ground of the opposition our Lord met with in the course of his ministry; and the objections and artifices his enemies employed to prejudice the people against him, and prevent the reception of his doctrine.*

IF our knowledge of the history of Jesus was confined to the excellence of his character, and the diffusive goodness that shone forth in all his actions, we should hardly conceive it possible, that any people could be so lost to gratitude and humanity as to oppose him. He went about doing good: He raised the dead, healed every disease, and relieved the distresses of all who applied to him, without any difference of cases, characters, or parties, as the sun, with a rich and unwearied profusion, fills every eye with his light. Wisdom flowed from his lips, and his whole conduct was perfect and inculpable. How natural is it to expect, that a person so amiable and benevolent, so blameless and exemplary, should have been universally revered \*.

\* The Heathen moralists have supposed, that there is something so amiable in virtue, that, could it be visible, it would necessarily attract the love and admiration of all beholders. This sentiment has been generally admired; and we need not wonder, since it flatters the pride of man without thwarting his passions. In the Lord Jesus, this great *desideratum* was vouchsafed; virtue and goodness were pleased to become visible, were manifest in the flesh. But did the experiment answer to the ideas of the philosophers? Alas! to the reproach of mankind, Jews and Gentiles conspired to treat him with the utmost contempt. They loved darkness, and therefore could not bear the light. They had more compassion and affection for the most infamous malefactor; therefore, when the alternative was proposed to them, they released Barabbas, a robber and a murderer, and nailed Jesus and virtue to the cross.

But



But we find in fact it was far otherwise. Instead of the honours he justly deserved, the returns he met with were reproach, persecution, and death. The wonders of his power and goodness were maliciously ascribed to Satan: he was branded as an impostor, madman, and demoniac; he was made the sport of servants and soldiers, and at length publicly executed with every possible circumstance of ignominy and torture as a malefactor of the worst sort.

What could be the cause and motives of such injurious treatment? This is the subject of our present inquiry. It might indeed be answered very briefly, (as it has been), by ascribing it to the peculiar wickedness and perverseness of the Jews. There is not a fallacy more frequent or pleasing to the minds of men, than while they act contrary to present duty, to please themselves with imagining how well they would have behaved in another situation, or a different age. They think it a mark of virtue to condemn the wickedness of former times, not aware that they themselves are governed by the same spirit. Thus these very Jews spoke highly of the persons of the prophets, while they rejected their testimony; and blamed their forefathers for shedding innocent blood, at the time they were thirsting for the blood of Jesus (1). It is equally easy at present to condemn the treachery of Judas, the cowardice of Pilate, the blindness of the people, and the malice of the priests, who were all personally concerned in the death of Christ. It is easy to think, that if we had seen his works, and heard his words, we would not have joined with the multitude in crying, Crucify him; tho', it is to be feared, many who thus flatter themselves have little less enmity against his person and doc-

(1) Matth. xxiii. 29. 30.



trine than his actual murderers. On this account, I shall give a detail of the true reasons why Christ was opposed in the flesh, and of the measures employed against him, in order to shew that the same grounds of opposition are deeply rooted in the fallen human nature; and how probable it is, that if he was to appear again in the same obscure manner, in any country now called by his name, he would meet with little better treatment, unless when the constitution and laws of a civil government might interpose to prevent it.

But it may be proper, in the first place, briefly to delineate the characters of the sects or parties mentioned by the evangelists, whose leaders, jointly and separately, both from common and distinct motives, opposed our Saviour's ministry, and cavilled at his doctrine. These (1) were the Pharisees, Sadducees, and Herodians.

The *Pharisees*, including the scribes, (who were chiefly of this sect), were professedly the guardians of the law, and public teachers of the people. They were held in high veneration by the common people, for the austerity of their deportment, the frequency of their devotions, and their exactness in the less essential parts of the law. They observed the traditions of the elders were still adding to them; and the consequence was, (as it will always be in such a case), that they were so pleased with their own inventions, as to prefer them to the positive commands of God; and their studious punctuality in trifles withdrew their regard from the most important duties. Their specious shew of piety was a fair outside, under which the grossest abominations were concealed and indulged. They were full of pride, and a high conceit of their own goodness: they fasted and prayed to be seen and

(1) See Matth. xxiii.; Mark, vii. 13.; Luke, xviii. 9.—14.

esteemed



esteemed of men: they expected reverence and homage from all, and challenged the highest titles of respect, to be saluted as doctors and masters, and to be honoured with the principal seats in all assemblies. Many of them made their solemn exterior a cloak for extortion and oppression; and the rest, if not hypocrites in the very worst sense, yet deceived both themselves, and others, by a form of godliness, when they were in effect enslaved by their passions, and lived according to the corrupt rule of their own imaginations.

The *Sadducees*, their antagonists and rivals, were equally, though differently, remote from the true knowledge and worship of God. They not only rejected the tradition of the elders, but a great part of the scriptures likewise; and admitted only the five books of Moses as of divine authority. From this circumstance, together with the difficulty (1) they proposed to our Lord, and the answer he gave them, it appears, that they were persons, who professing in general terms to acknowledge a revelation from God, yet made their own prejudices and mistakes, under the dignified name of *Reason*, the standard to determine what books should be received as authentic, and in what sense they should be understood. The doctrine of a resurrection did not accord with their notions; therefore they rejected it, together \* with those

\* That the *Sadducees* received only the law of Moses, is the general opinion; though I do not say that it has been either indubitably proved, or universally held. That they put their own sense upon the scriptures, (whether in whole or in part), which they did profess to receive, is manifest, from their asserting, that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit: A tenet which contradicts not one or a few texts, but the whole strain and tenor both of the law and the prophecies.

(1) *Matth. xxii. 23.*; *Acts, xxiii. 8.*



parts of scripture which asserted it most expressly. Their question concerning the seven brethren seems to have been a trite objection, which they had often made, and which had never been answered to satisfaction till our Lord resolved it. But the whole difficulty was founded upon false principles; and when these were removed, all fell to the ground at once. From this, however, we may learn their characteristic; they were the cautious reasoners of those times, who valued themselves on examining every thing closely, refusing to be influenced by the plausible sounds of antiquity and authority.

The *Herodians* (1) were those who endeavoured to ingratiate themselves with Herod. It is most probable that they received their name and distinction, not so much from any peculiar sentiments, as from attempting to accommodate their religion to the circumstances of the times. The Pharisees, boasting of their privileges as the children of Abraham, could hardly brook a foreign yoke; but the Herodians, from motives of interest, were advocates for Herod and the Roman power. Thus they were opposite to the Pharisees in political matters, as the Sadducees were in points of doctrine: and therefore the question concerning tribute was proposed to our Lord jointly by the Pharisees and Herodians, the former designing to render him obnoxious to the people if he allowed of tribute, the latter to accuse him to the government if he refused it.

From what has been said, it is evident the leading principles of these sects were not peculiar to themselves. They may rather be considered universally, as specimens of the different appearances a religious profession assumes where the heart is

(1) Matth xxii. 16.; Mark, iii 6.



not divinely enlightened and converted to the love of the truth. In all such persons, however high the pretence of religion may be carried, it cannot proceed from a nobler principle, or aim at a nobler object than *self*. These dispositions have appeared in every age and form of the Christian church, and are always active to oppose the self-denying doctrines of the gospel upon different pretences. The man who, fond of his fancied attainments, and scrupulous exactness, in externals, despises all who will not conform to his rules, and challenges peculiar respect on account of his superior goodness, is a proud *Pharisee*. His zeal is dark, envious, and bitter: his obedience partial and self-willed; and while he boasts of the knowledge of God, his heart rises with enmity at the grace of the gospel, which he boldly charges with opening a door to licentiousness. The modern Sadducee (like those of old) admits of a revelation; but then, full of his own wisdom and importance, he arraigns even the revelation he seems to allow at the bar of his narrow judgement; and as the sublime doctrines of truth pass under his review, he affixes, without hesitation, the epithets of absurd, inconsistent, and blasphemous, to whatever thwarts his pride, prejudice, and ignorance; and those parts of scripture which cannot be warped to speak his sense, he discards from his canon as interpolated and supposititious. The *Herodian* is the man, however denominated or dignified, who is governed by interest, as the others by pride, and vainly endeavours to reconcile the incompatible services of God and the world, Christ and Belial. He avoids the excesses of religious parties, speaks in terms of moderation, and is not unwilling to be accounted the pattern and friend of sobriety and religion. He stands fair with all who would be religious upon cheap terms, and fair in his own esteem,

D 2



steem, having numbers and authority on his side. Thus he almost persuades himself he has carried his point; and that it is not so impossible to serve two masters as our Lord's words seem to import: but the preaching of the pure gospel, which enforces the one thing needful, and will admit of no compliances with worldly interests, interferes with *his* plan, and incurs *his* resentment likewise; though perhaps he will shew his displeasure by more refined and specious methods than the clamorous rage of hot bigotry has patience to wait for.

We now proceed. The first great cause why Jesus was rejected by those to whom he appealed, may be deduced from the tenor of his doctrine, a summary of which has been given in the former chapter. It offended the pride of the Pharisees, was repugnant to the wise infidelity of the Sadducees, and condemned the pliant temper of the Herodians. The doctrines of free grace, faith, and spiritual obedience, were diametrically opposite to their inclinations. They must have parted with all they admired and loved if they had complied with him; but this is a sacrifice too great for any to make who had not deeply felt and known their need of a Saviour. These, on the contrary, were the whole, who saw no want of a physician, and therefore treated his offers with contempt.

Besides, their dislike to his doctrine was increased by his manner of enforcing it. He spoke with authority, and sharply rebuked the hypocrisy, ignorance, ambition, and avarice of those persons who were accounted the wise and the good, who sat in Moses's chair, and had hitherto been heard and obeyed with reverence. But Jesus exposed their true characters: he spoke of them as blind guides; he compared them to *painted sepulchres*, and cautioned the people against them as danger-

ous



ous deceivers \*. It is no wonder, therefore, that on this account they hated him with a perfect hatred.

Again, they were exceedingly offended with the high character he assumed as the Son of God, and the Messiah. On this account, they condemned him to die for blasphemy. They expected a Messiah indeed, who they professed was spoken of in the scripture; but they understood not what the scriptures had revealed, either concerning his divine nature, or his voluntary humiliation, that he was to be the son and lord of David, yet a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief. They denied his divinity, and themselves unwittingly fulfilled the prophecies that spoke of his sufferings; affording, by their conduct, a memorable proof, how fatally persons may mistake the sense of the word of God, while they profess highly to esteem it.

What farther increased their contempt of his claims, and contributed to harden their hearts more implacably against him, was the obscurity and poverty of his state. While they were governed by worldly wisdom, and sought not the teaching of God's Spirit, they could not but suppose an utter repugnance between the meanness of his condition, and the honours he vindicated to himself. (They expected a Messiah to come in pomp and power, to deliver them from the Roman yoke.) For a person truly divine, who made himself equal with God, to be encompassed with poverty and distress,

\* Matth. xxiii. 27. Nothing is more loathsome to our senses than a corpse in the state of putrefaction, or a more striking contrast to the outside of a sumptuous ornamented monument. Perhaps the visible creation does not afford any other image that would so strongly express the true character of hypocrisy, and how hateful it appears in the sight of God, who is of purer eyes than to behold iniquity, and before whom all things are naked and open.



Seemed such profane contradiction, as might justify every mark of indignity they could offer him. And this difficulty must equally affect every unenlightened mind. If *man* had been left to devise in what manner the Lord of the universe would probably descend to dwell a while with poor mortals in a visible form, they would undoubtedly have imagined such a scene, if their thoughts could have reached it, as is described by the prophets on other occasions; the heavens bowing, the earth shaking, the mountains ready to start from their places, and all nature labouring to do homage to her Creator. Or if he came in a milder way, they would at least have contrived an assemblage of all that we conceive magnificent; a pomp and splendor surpassing all the world ever saw. Expecting nations crowding to welcome his arrival, and thrones of gold, and palaces of ivory, would have been judged too mean, to accommodate so glorious a guest. But the Lord's thoughts and ways are different from man's. The beloved Son of God, by whom all things were made, was born in a stable, and grew up in an obscure and mean condition. He came to suffer and to die for sin, to sanctify poverty and affliction to his people, to set a perfect example of patience and submission; therefore he made himself of no reputation, but took on him the form and offices of a servant. This was the appointment of divine wisdom; but so incredible in the judgement of blinded mortals, that the apostle assures us, "no man can say that Jesus is the Lord (1)," can perceive and acknowledge his inherent excellence, and authority, through the disgraceful circumstances of his humiliation, "but by the Holy Ghost." His enemies, therefore, thought they sufficiently

(1) 1 Cor. xii. 3.

refuted.



refuted his assertions, by referring to his supposed parents, and the reputed place of his nativity.

Their envy and hatred were still more inflamed, by observing the character of his followers. These were chiefly poor and illiterate persons; and many of them had been notoriously wicked, or accounted so; publicans and sinners, whose names and professions were vile to a proverb. And for such as these, and almost these only, to acknowledge the person whom they refused, and by professing themselves his disciples (1) to set up for being wiser than their teachers; this was a mortification to their pride which they could not bear, especially when they found their number daily to increase, and therefore could not but fear their own influence would proportionably decline.

Once more: Mistaking the nature of his kingdom, which he often spoke of, they opposed him from reasons of state. They feared, or pretended to fear, that if they suffered him to go on, the increase of his disciples would give umbrage to the Romans, who would come and take away both their places and their nation (2). Some perhaps really had this apprehension; but it was more generally a pretence, which the leaders made use of to alarm the ignorant. They were in truth impatient of the Roman yoke, prone to tumults, and ready to listen to every deceiver who promised them deliverance, under pretence of being their expected Messiah. But from enmity and opposition to Jesus, they became loyal at once. So they might accomplish their designs against him, they were content to forget other grievances, and openly professed, they would have no other king but Cæsar.

These were some of the chief motives which united the opposite interests and jarring sentiments of

(1) John, vii. 49. ix. 34.

(2) John, vi. 48.



the Jewish sects against our blessed Lord. We are next to consider the methods they employed to prejudice the multitudes against him. The bulk of the common people seldom think for themselves in religious concerns, but judge it sufficient to give up their understandings and consciences to their professed teachers \*. They are, however, for the most part more unprejudiced and open to conviction than their guides, whose reputation and interest are more nearly concerned to maintain every established error, and to stop up every avenue by which truth and reformation might enter. The Jewish people, uninfluenced by the proud and selfish views of the priests and rulers, readily honoured the ministry of Christ, and attended him in great multitudes. If they did not enter into the grand design of his mission, they at least gave him testimonies of respect. When Jesus caused (1) the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see, they glorified the God of Israel, saying, A great prophet is risen up amongst us, God has visited his people. Now, what was to be done in this case? Would the scribes and Pharisees stand unconcerned? No; it is said in several places, they were filled with indignation †, and essayed every means to bring his person and miracles into disrepute. The methods they used are worthy of notice, having been often

\* This is much to be lamented; for if the blind lead the blind, shall they not both fall into the ditch? Matth. xv. 14. When the blind lead the blind, how indeed can it be otherwise, if the former imagine they *see*, and the latter are content to be *led*! alas for the people that are in such a case! alas for their guides!

† It is a strong symptom of hypocrisy and enmity to the gospel, to be offended with any new and remarkable displays of divine grace.

(1) Matth. xv. 31.; Luke, vii. 16.

repeated



repeated since (as to their substance) against the servants of Christ.

1. They availed themselves of a popular mistake concerning his birth. Jesus was born in Bethlehem, according to the scriptures; but being removed from thence in his infancy to avoid Herod's cruelty, and his parents afterwards living at Nazareth in Galilee, he was supposed by many, to have been born there. Even Nathaniel was prejudiced by this mistake, but happily yielded to Philip's advice to examine for himself. But it prevented many from inquiring much about Jesus, and therefore his enemies made the most of it, and confidently appealed to the scripture, when it seemed to decide in their favour. Search and look (1), for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. It is probable many were staggered with this objection, and thought it sufficient to invalidate all his discourses and miracles; since, let him say and do what he would, he could not possibly be the Messiah, if he was born in Galilee.

2. They urged, that he could not be of God, because he infringed the law of Moses, and broke the Sabbath. This, though it may seem a groundless objection to us, was not so to many at that time, who knew not the spiritual design and meaning of the law, and perhaps had not the opportunity to hear our Lord (2) vindicate himself. They urged this vehemently against the force of a notorious miracle, and not without some colour, from the words of Moses (3) himself; who had warned them to beware of false teachers, tho' they should confirm their doctrine by signs and wonders.

3. They reproached the freedom of his conversation. Jesus was of easy access, and condescended

(1) John, vii. 42. 52.

(2) John, ix. 16.

(3) Deut. xiii. 2.



to converse and eat with any who invited him. He neither practised, nor enjoyed the austerities, which carry the air of superior sanctity in the judgement of weak and superstitious minds. They therefore styled him a glutton (1) and wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners; that is, as they intended it, a companion with them, and a conniver at their wickedness. Nothing could be more false and slanderous than this charge, or more easily refuted, if the people would examine closely. But as it came from teachers who were highly revered for mortification, and as Jesus was usually attended by many with whom it was thought infamous to associate, it could not but have great weight with the credulous and indolent.

4. They laid much stress upon the mean condition of his followers. They were mostly Galileans, a people of small estimation, and of the lowest rank, fishermen or publicans; while, on the other hand, few or none of the rulers or Pharisees, who were presumed to be best qualified (2) to judge of his pretensions, had believed on him. Those who are acquainted with human nature, cannot but know how strongly this appeal to the judgement of persons eminent for their learning or station, operates upon minds who have no better criterion of truth. How could a Jew, who had been from his infancy superstitiously attached to the Pharisees, suppose, that these eminently devout men, who spent their lives in the study of the law, would have rejected Jesus, if he had been a good man?

5. When, notwithstanding all their surmises, multitudes still professed high thoughts of Jesus, beholding his wonderful works, they proceeded with the most blasphemous effrontery to defame the miracles they could not deny, and maliciously ascri-

(1) Luke, vii. 34.

(2) John, vii. 48.



bed them to the agency of the devil (1). This pertinacious resistance to the conviction, both of their senses and consciences, was the highest stage of impiety, and constituted their sin, as our Lord assured them, unpardonable. Not that any sin, considered in itself, is too great for the blood of Jesus to expiate, but as they utterly renounced and scorned his mediation, there remained no other sacrifice, but they were judicially given up to incurable impenitence and hardness of heart. Yet it is probable, that even this black assertion was not without influence upon some, who were wedded to their sins, and therefore glad of any pretext, how unreasonable soever, to refuse the testimony of truth.

6. Another means they made use of, the last we shall enumerate, and not the least effectual to intimidate the minds of the people from acknowledging Jesus, was the convincing argument of violence and ill treatment. Having the power in their hands, they employed it against his followers, and made an agreement, that whoever confessed he was Christ, should be put out of the (2) synagogue, that is, *excommunicated*. This decree seems to have been made by the Sanhedrim, or great council, and to imply not merely an exclusion from the rites of public worship, but likewise a positive punishment, equivalent to an *outlawry* with us. The fear of incurring this penalty restrained the parents of the (3) man born blind, and prevented many others who were in their hearts convinced that he was the Messiah, from owning him as such. They loved the world; they preferred the praise of men to the praise of God; and therefore remained silent and neuter.

From such motives, and by such methods, our

(1) Matth. xii. 14.

(2) John, iz. 22.

(3) John, xii. 42.

Lord



Lord was resisted and opposed by the heads of the Jewish nation. The scribes and teachers, to whom the key of knowledge was by authority committed, disdained to use it themselves, and those who were willing they hindered. Had they been wise and faithful, they would have directed the people to Christ; but, on the contrary, they darkened the plainest scriptures, and perverted the clearest facts, to prevent (if possible) his reception. In vain he spoke as never man spoke, and multiplied the wonders of his power and love in their presence. In vain to them.—They pursued him with unwearied subtlety \* and malice, traduced him to the people and to the government, and would be satisfied with nothing less than his death: so obstinate and wicked is the heart of man, so fatal are the prejudices of pride and worldly interest. For as we observed before, these tempers were not peculiar to the Jews; they are essential to depraved nature, and operate universally, where the grace of God does not make a difference. To this hour the gospel of Christ is opposed upon the same grounds, and by the like artifices, as were once employed against his person.

The doctrines which his faithful ministers deduce and enforce from the written word, are no other than what he himself taught, namely, a declaration of his personal honours and authority, of the insufficiency of formal worship, in which the heart is not concerned, of the extent and spirituality of the law of God, and of salvation, freely proclaimed to the miserable, through faith in

\* Mark, xii. 13. They sent unto him certain of the Pharisees to catch him. *Αγρευω* expresses the art and assiduity of sportsmen, in the various methods they use to ensnare, entangle, or destroy their game. It well suits the spirit and design of our Lord's enemies, in the question proposed, and is finely contrasted by the meekness and wisdom of his answer.

his



his name. The self-righteous, the self-wise, and all who are devoted to the pleasures and honours of the world, have each their particular exceptions to these truths. The wisdom of God they account foolishness; and the language of their hearts is, We will not have this man to reign over us. And the success of these doctrines, which is chiefly visible among such as they have been accustomed to despise, is equally offensive; yet so inconsistent are they, that if here and there a few persons, who were before eminent for their rank, attainments, or morality, are prevailed on to account all things but loss and dung, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus their Lord, this, instead of removing their first objection, excites their rage and contempt still more.

And as the motives of their hatred, so their methods of expressing it are the same. They are not ashamed to adopt and exaggerate the most vulgar misconceptions; they set the scripture at variance with itself; and while they pass over the plainest and most important passages unnoticed, they dwell upon a few texts of more dubious import, and therefore more easily accommodated to their sense. With these they flourish and triumph, and affect an high zeal in defence of the word of God. They reproach the pure gospel as licentious, because it exposes the vanity of their singularities, and will-worship, and are desirous to bind heavier burdens upon mens shoulders, which few of themselves will touch with one of their fingers. They enlarge on the weakness and ignorance of those who mostly receive the new doctrine, and entrench themselves under the sanction of learned and dignified names. They even venture to explode and vilify the evident effects of God's grace, and ascribe the agency of his Spirit to enthusiasm, infatuation, and madness, if not expressly to dia-



bolical influence. And, lastly, so far as Divine Providence permits, they shew themselves actuated by the primitive spirit of oppression and violence, in pursuing the faithful followers of the truth with censures and penalties.

But let who will rage, and imagine vain things, Jesus is the King in Zion. He is the same yesterday, to day, and for ever. There were a happy few in the days of his flesh, who beheld his glory, trusted on him for salvation, and attended him amidst the many reproaches and sufferings he endured from sinners. Of these, his first witnesses, we are to speak in the following chapter. His gospel likewise, though opposed by many, and slighted by more, is never preached in vain. To some it will always be the power and wisdom of God; they know in whom they have believed, and therefore are not ashamed to appear in his cause against all disadvantages. Supported and encouraged by his Spirit, they go on from strength to strength, and are successively made more than conquerors, by his blood, and the word of his testimony.

---

#### C H A P. IV.

*Observations on the calling and characters of our Lord's apostles and disciples previous to his ascension.*

FROM what has been observed in the preceding chapters, it is evident, that those who assert a principle of free will in man, sufficiently enabling him to chuse and determine for himself, when the truths of the gospel are plainly laid before him, do thereby (so far as in them lies) render the salvation



tion of mankind highly precarious, if not utterly hopeless and impracticable. Notwithstanding God was pleased to send his own Son with a gracious message; notwithstanding his whole life was a series of wonders, and all his actions discovered a wisdom, power, and goodness, answerable to his high character; notwithstanding the time, manner, and design of his appearance and sufferings had been clearly foretold; yet, so far as a judgment can be made from the event, he would certainly have lived and died in vain, without influence or honour, without leaving a single disciple, if the same grace that provided the means of redemption, had not engaged to make them effectual, by preparing and disposing the hearts of sinners to receive him.

In the account given us by the evangelists of those who professed themselves his disciples, we may discern, as in miniature, the general methods of his grace; and, comparing his personal ministry, with the effects of his gospel, in all succeeding times, we may be assured, that the work and the power are still the same. The choice he made of his disciples, the manner of their calling, their characters, and even their defects and failings, in a word, all that is recorded concerning them, is written for our instruction, and is particularly useful to teach us the true meaning of what passes within our own observation.

I. Several things are worthy our notice in this view, with respect to the *choice* of his disciples.

1<sup>st</sup>, They were comparatively very few. He was, indeed, usually attended by multitudes in the different places where he preached, because he spoke with a power they had never met with before, and because he healed the sick, fed the hungry, and did good to all. But he had very few



constant followers. Those who assembled at Jerusalem after his ascension, are said to have been but about one hundred and twenty (1); and when he appointed his disciples a solemn meeting in Galilee, informing them before-hand of the time and place where he would come to them, the number that then met here, is expressed by the apostle to have been more than five hundred \*. We can hardly suppose that any who loved him, and were able to travel, would have been absent upon so interesting an occasion; but how small a company was this if compared with the many thousands among whom he had conversed in all the cities and villages through which he had passed, preaching the gospel, and performing innumerable miracles, for more than three years! Well might the prophet say, foreseeing the small success he would meet with, "who hath believed our report, and "to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?" But since he, in whom the fulness of grace resided, had so few disciples, it may lessen our surprize, that his gospel, though in itself the power and wisdom of God, should meet with so cold a reception amongst men, as it has in fact always done.

2dly, Of those few who professed a more entire attachment to his person, a considerable part, after attending him for some time, went back, and walked no more with him. They were but superficially convinced, and rather struck with the power

\* 1 Cor. xv. 6. The word *brethren* there used, does not prove that none but men were present at that time, any more than that, because the apostles, in their public preaching, addressed their hearers as men and brethren, there were therefore no women amongst them, or the women were not considered as having any interest or concern in the gospel-ministry.

(1) Acts, i. 15.



of his words and works, than deeply sensible of their own need of him. When therefore, upon a certain occasion, he spoke of the more inward and experimental part of religion, the life of faith, and the necessity of eating his flesh, and drinking his blood, so many were offended at his doctrine, and forsook him (1), that he said unto the twelve, "Will ye also go away?" which seems to imply, that there were few but these remaining. Therefore, though we see at present, that where the fount of the gospel brings multitudes together, many, who for a season appeared in earnest, gradually decline in their profession, and, at length, wholly return to their former ways, we have the less reason to wonder, or be discouraged, remembering that it was thus from the beginning.

3dly, Those who believed on Christ then, were chiefly (as we had occasion to observe before) persons of low condition, and many of them had been formerly vile and obnoxious in their conduct. While the wise and learned rejected him, his more immediate followers were Galileans, fishermen, publicans, and sinners. This was observed and urged to his reproach and theirs; and the like offence has always attended his gospel. But what enrages his enemies, fills the hearts and mouths of his poor people with praise. They (2) adore his condescension in taking notice of the most unworthy, and admire the efficacy of his grace in making those who were once wretched slaves to Satan, a free and willing people in the day of his power.

4thly, But this was not universally the case. Though not many wise, rich, or noble, were called, there were some even of these. His grace triumphed over every circumstance of life. Zaccheus

(1) John, vi. 66. 67.

(2) Luke, i. 52. 53.



was a rich man \*, Nicodemus a ruler of the Jews, Joseph an honourable counsellor. We also read of a nobleman, or courtier, who believed with all his house. In every age, likewise, there have been some persons of distinguished eminence, for birth, honours, and abilities, who have cheerfully engaged in the profession of a despised gospel, though they have thereby incurred a double share of opposition from the men of the world, especially from those of their own rank. The number of these has been always sufficient to confute those who would insinuate, that the gospel is only suited to the taste of the vulgar and ignorant; yet it has always been so small as to make it evident, that the truth is not supported by the wisdom or influence of men, but by the power and providence of God.

5thly, It is farther observable, that several of our Lord's few disciples were under previous connections amongst themselves. Peter (1) and Andrew were brothers, as likewise James and John; and these, together with Philip, and perhaps Nathaniel, seem to have been all of one † town (2).

\* Zaccheus was a chief or principal publican, to whom the rest were accountable; a commissioner of the revenue. *And he was rich.* The Greek is more expressive, *and this was a rich man*, Luke, xix. 2. perhaps alluding to what had passed a little before, chap. xviii. 25. This remark is added to remind us, that what is impossible with men, is easy to him who can speak to the heart, and turn it as he will.

† Compare Mark, i. 16. Luke, v. 10. with John, i. 44. 45. These six, and more than these, were fishermen, John, xxi. 2. and such they continued, *only their net-success and capture were so much changed, that it became a new calling*: He made them fishers of men. In the fisherman's calling there is required a certain dexterity, much patience, and a readiness to bear hardships. Perhaps many observations they made in their former business, were useful to them afterwards. And the Lord still brings up his servants so, that the remembrance of former years (the years of ignorance) becomes a rule and encouragement in future and different scenes of life.

(1) John, i. 40.

(2) Amos, iv. 7.

The



The other James, and Jude, were also brethren. So it is said, Jesus loved Mary, and her sister, and Lazarus, three in one house, when perhaps the whole place hardly afforded a fourth; and more in a single village than were to be found in many larger cities taken together. This circumstance more strongly marked the discrimination of his grace, in making the means effectual where, and to whom he pleased. Such has been the usual event of his gospel since. It is proclaimed to all, but accepted by few; and of these several are often found in one family, while their next door-neighbours account it a burden and offence. It flourishes here and there in a few places (1), while those of the adjacent country are buried in more than Egyptian darkness, and resist the endeavours of those who would invite them to partake of the same benefits. Thus the Lord is pleased to display his own sovereignty, in raising and sending forth his ministers when and where he sees fit, and in determining the subjects and measure of their success. If others dispute and cavil against this procedure \*, those who believe

\* See Rom. xi. 23. There are but few who dispute upon the subject of the divine decrees with that reverence and caution St Paul expresses. In chap. ix. when an objection was started, he cuts it short with, "But who art thou, O man, that repliest against God?" And here he breaks off, abruptly with, "O the depth!" He seems to have followed the narrow-winding streams of human reasoning, till he finds himself unawares upon the brink of an ocean that has neither bounds nor bottom. And every word expresses the reverence and astonishment with which his mind was filled; the wisdom of the divine counsels in their first plan; the knowledge of their extensive consequences in this world, in all worlds, in time, and in eternity; the riches of that wisdom and knowledge; the depth of those riches; his counsels inaccessible; his proceedings untraceable: All is wonderful in St Paul's view. How different this from the trifling, arrogant spirit of too many upon this topic!

(1) Amos, iv. 7.

have



have cause to adore his goodness to themselves. And a day is at hand when every mouth shall be stopped that would contend with the just judge of all the earth. The impenitent and unbelieving will not then dare to charge him with injustice for dealing with them according to their own counsels and desires, inasmuch as when the light of truth was ready to break upon them, they chose darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

2. In the calling of our Lord's disciples, and the manner in which they were brought to know and serve him, we may discover the same variety as, at this day, appears in the conversion of sinners by the preaching of the gospel.

Some, from a religious education, an early acquaintance with the scriptures, and the secret influence of the Spirit of God upon their hearts, are gradually prepared for the reception of the truth. They read, and strive, and pray; they feel an uneasiness, and a want, which they know not how to remedy; they are sincerely desirous to know and do the will of God; and yet, through misapprehension, and the influence of popular prejudice, they are for a season withheld from the means that would relieve them. But at length the preaching of the gospel explains to them the meaning of their former exercises, exactly answers to the state of their minds, and thereby brings its own evidence. Similar to this was the case of Nathaniel. When our Lord referred him to what had passed under the fig-tree, where he had thought himself alone and unobserved, his doubts and scruples vanished in an instant. There is little doubt but Nathaniel had been praying under the fig-tree, and probably desiring a further knowledge of the prophecies, and their accomplishment in the Messiah. He had heard of Jesus, but could not fully clear up  
the



the objections made against him; but now he was convinced and satisfied in a moment.

The attention of some is drawn by what they see and hear around them. They form a favourable opinion of the gospel from the remarkable effects it produces; but their first inquiries are damped by difficulties which they cannot easily get over, and they are ready to say, How can these things be? Their interests and connections in life are a farther hindrance; the fear of man, which bringeth a snare, is a great restraint upon their inquiries; but now and then, when they can venture without being noticed, they seek farther instruction. Now, though this hesitating spirit, which pays so much deference to worldly regards in the search of truth, is highly blameable; yet the Lord, who is rich in mercy, is often pleased to produce a happy and abiding change from such imperfect beginnings. As they increase in knowledge, they gain more courage, and in time arrive to a comfortable experience and open profession of the truth. Thus it was with Nicodemus: he was at first ignorant and fearful; but his interview with Jesus, by night, had a good effect. He afterwards ventured to speak more publicly (1) in his favour, though still he did not join himself to the disciples; but the circumstances of Christ's death freed him from all fear, and inspired him to attempt the most obnoxious service, when the apostles themselves were afraid to be seen (2).

Others are first prompted to hear the gospel from no higher motive than curiosity; but going as mere spectators, they find themselves retained as parties unawares. The word of God, powerful and penetrating as a two-edged sword, discovers the thoughts and intents of their hearts, presses up-

(1) John, vii. 50.

(2) John, xix. 39.



on their consciences, and seems addressed to themselves alone. The sentiments they carry away with them are far different from those they brought; and a change in their whole deportment immediately takes place. Such was the case of Zaccheus (1): he had heard much of Jesus, and desired to see him: for this end, he ran before, and climbed a tree; from whence he proposed to behold him unobserved. But how great must his surprise and emotion have been, when Jesus, whom he had considered as a stranger, looked up, called him by his name, and invited himself to his house.

Some are drawn by the report of others, freely declaring what the Lord has done for their souls. The relation awakens in them desires after him, which are not disappointed; for he is rich enough to satisfy all who seek to him. So the Samaritans, whose expectations were first raised by the woman's declaration (2), "Come and see a man which told me all things that ever I did; is not this the Christ?" had soon a more convincing testimony, and could say, "Now we believe, not because of thy word, but we have heard him ourselves; and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world."

To a few the first impulses of divine grace come suddenly and unthought-of, when their hearts and hands are engaged quite another way; as Saul, who was seeking his father's asses, received the unexpected news of a kingdom. A ray of truth pierces their minds like lightening, and disposes them to leave their schemes unfinished, to seek the kingdom of God and his righteousness only. Thus (3) our Lord passed by the sons of Zebedee when mending

(1) Luke, xix. 5.

(2) John, iv. 42.

(3) Mark, i. 16. 19.

their



their nets, and Matthew (1) while busied at the receipt of custom. He only said, *Follow me*: he used no arguments, he proposed no rewards; but he spoke to their hearts, and, by the constraining power of his love, engaged them to a chearful and immediate obedience.

Afflictions likewise are now, no less than formerly, a happy means to bring many to Jesus. He prepares them for heavenly blessings, by embittering or removing their creature-comforts. Had they continued in prosperity, they would not have thought of him; but the loss of health, or friends, or substance, disappointments in life, or a near prospect of death, constrain them in good earnest to seek for one able to deliver them. In the time of their distress, they say, *Arise, and save us*; not that afflictions in themselves can produce this turn of thought. Too many, in such circumstances, toss like a wild bull in a net; but when he sends afflictions for this purpose, they accomplish that which he pleases. Thus, when he was upon earth, many who came or were brought (2) to him for the relief of bodily disorders, experienced a double cure. He healed (3) their diseases, and pardoned their sins. At the same time that he restored the blind to sight (4), he opened the eyes of their minds. He sometimes made the afflictions of one the means to bring a whole family to the knowledge of his grace. A considerable part of his followers were such as these, whom he had graciously relieved from distresses incurable by any hand but his. Some had been long and grievously tormented; had essayed every means, but found themselves worse and worse, till they applied to him; and having known the

(1) Mark, ii. 14.

(2) Mark, ii. 9.

(3) John, ix. 7. 36. 38.

(4) John, iv. 53.

happy



happy effects of his power and compassion, they would leave him no more.

Lastly, we sometimes meet with instances of his mercy, and ability to save even to the uttermost, in the unhopèd-for conversion of desperate and hardened sinners, who have gone on with a high hand, regardless of mercies, warnings, and judgments, till they seemed past conviction, and given up to a reprobate mind. Their state resembles that of the Demoniack, Luke viii. They are so entirely under the power of the devil, (though perhaps they vainly boast of freedom), that no arguments, no motives, no resolutions, can restrain them within bounds; but they break through every tie of nature, conscience, and reason, and are restless drudges in the service of sin, though they feel themselves miserable at present, and see inevitable ruin before their eyes. Yet even this case is not too hard for him on whom the sinner's help is laid. He can dispossess the legion with a word; he can take the prey from the mighty, and deliver the lawful captive, bind the strong one armed, and divide his spoil. Happy change! when the power of grace not only sets the soul at liberty from sin and Satan, but puts it in possession of what were lately the instruments of its slavery! when all the powers and faculties of body and mind are redeemed to the Lord's use, and the experience of past evil is made conducive to future comfort and advantage! Such an instance was that great sinner, that penitent, believing, happy soul, of whom it is emphatically remarked, "She loved much, because much had been forgiven her (1)." Sometimes the deliverance is deferred till near the period of life. The poor wretch, labouring under the pangs or dread of death, and trembling at the apprehen-

(1) Luke, vii. 47.



sion of falling into the hands of the living God, is snatched as a brand out of the fire; he receives faith in a suffering Saviour, and feels the power of atoning blood; his terrors cease, and joy succeeds, a joy unspeakable and full of glory. Thus the expiring malefactor (1) was converted upon the cross, and received an infallible assurance of salvation.

3. The characters of our Lord's disciples, with the account we have of their defects and failings, may farther illustrate the history of his church and gospel, and afford an apology for the blemishes, which, through human infirmity, do more or less attend the prevalence of his doctrines.

The grace of God has a real influence upon the whole man. It enlightens the understanding, directs the will, purifies the affection, regulates the passions, and corrects the different excesses, to which different persons are by constitution or habit inclined; yet it seldom wholly changes the complexion or temper of the animal frame. It does not impart any new natural powers, though it teaches the use and improvement of those we have received. It will dispose us to seek instruction, make us open to conviction, and willing to part with our prejudices, so far and so soon as we discover them; but it will not totally and instantaneously remove them. Hence there are a great variety of characters in the Christian life; and the several graces of the Spirit, as zeal, love, meekness, faith, appear with peculiar advantage in different subjects; yet so that every commendable property is subject to its particular inconvenience. Perfection cannot be found in fallen man. The best are sometimes blameable, and the wisest often mista-

(1) Luke, xxiii. 43.



ken. Warm and active tempers, though influenced, in the main, by the noble ambition of pleasing God in all things, are apt to overshoot themselves, and to discover a resentment and keenness of spirit which cannot be wholly justified. Others of a more fixed and sedate temper, though less subject to this extreme, are prone to its opposite; their gentleness degenerates into indolence, their caution into cowardice. The principle of self likewise, which, though subdued, is not eradicated, will in some instances appear. Add to this the unknown access and influence which the evil spirits have upon our minds, the sudden and new emergencies which surprise us into action before we have had time to deliberate, with many other considerations of a like nature; and it will be no wonder that some things are always amiss \*, in the best and most successful attempts to promote the glory of God and the good of souls. And it is farther to be noted, that some individuals will be found, who, though seemingly engaged in the same good work, and for a time pretending to much zeal, are essentially defective in their hearts and views; and when at length their true characters are exposed, the world, who either cannot or will not distinguish, charge the faults of a few upon a whole profession; as, in the former case, they wound the character of a good man for unavoidable and involuntary mistakes. We shall therefore shew, that either the exceptions made, and so loudly reverberated in our ears, against the gospel-doctrine, on these accounts, are

\* A lukewarm cautious spirit can easily avoid, and readily censure, the mistakes and faults of those who, fired with an honest warmth for the honour of God, and the good of souls, are sometimes transported beyond the bounds of strict prudence. But tho' the best intention cannot make that right which is wrong in itself, yet the zeal, diligence, and disinterested aim of such persons, are worthy of our esteem.

unjust,



unjust, or that there was sufficient cause to reject and condemn our Lord and his apostles for the same reasons.

The character of Peter is marked with admirable propriety and consistence by the evangelists. He every where appears like himself. Earnestly devoted to his master's person, and breathing an honest warmth for his service, he was in a manner the eye, the hand, the mouth, of the apostles : he was the first to ask, to answer, to propose, and to execute : he made a noble confession, for which our Lord honoured him with a peculiar commendation : he waited but for a command to walk to him upon the water : he was not afraid to expose himself in his Lord's defence, when he was surrounded and apprehended by his enemies ; and though, in this last instance, his affection was ill expressed, yet his motive was undoubtedly praiseworthy. His heart flamed with zeal and love ; and therefore he was always forward to distinguish himself.

But the warmth of Peter's temper often betrayed him into great difficulties, and shewed, that the grace he had received was consistent with many imperfections. Though he sincerely loved Christ, and had forsaken all for him, he was, at one time, so ignorant of the true design of his incarnation, that he was angry and impatient to hear him speak of his sufferings, and brought upon himself a most severe rebuke. Not content with the ordinary services allotted to him, he offered himself to unnecessary trials, as in the above instance, when he pressed to walk upon the water. The event shewed him his own weakness and insufficiency ; yet his self-confidence revived and continued. When our Lord warned him again and again of his approaching fall, he thought, and boldly affirmed, that it was impossible. He was sincere in his protestation ;



but the actual experiment was necessary to convince and humble him. Accordingly, when left to himself, he fell before the first temptation. And here the impetuosity of his temper was still manifest. He did not stop at a simple denial of Jesus, he confirmed it by an oath \*; and at length proceeded to utter bitter imprecations against himself, if he so much as knew him, whom he had seen transfigured in glory upon the mount, and prostrate in an agony in the garden. Such was the weakness and inconsistency of this prince of the apostles.

None of these excesses appeared in the conduct of the traitor *Judas*. He was so circumspect and reserved, that we do not find any of the disciples had the least suspicion of him. But whilst his heart was full of wickedness, he could find fault with others, and charge their best expressions of love with indiscretion. When Mary anointed our Lord's feet with ointment (1), he was displeased at the waste, and professed a warm concern for the poor; but we are told the true reason of his œconomy: It was not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and had the bag which contained the common stock intrusted to him. The *charge* of the bag is an office full of temptation; and an *attachment* to the bag has been often at the bottom of many censures and misrepresentations which have been thrown out against the people of God. It has been, and it

\* Mark, xiv. 71. "He began to curse and swear." *Ἀναθεματίζεν*. — To imprecate the most dreadful curses upon himself, and call solemnly on God to execute them. This was indeed the most probable method to free himself from the suspicion of being a disciple of Jesus; for no such language had been till then heard among his followers.

(1) John, 12. 5. 6.



will be so; but the Lord has appointed, that wherever the gospel should be preached, to the end of the world, this action of Mary, with the observation of Judas upon it, and the motive from which he made it, should be handed down together, that we may not be discouraged at things of the same kind. Without doubt, the treason of Judas, and his unhappy end, after having maintained a fair character so long, and shared with the rest in the honours of the apostleship, were to them an occasion of grief, and afforded their enemies a subject of reproach and triumph. But we may believe one reason why our Lord chose Judas, and continued him so long with his disciples, to have been, that we might learn by this awful instance not to be surprised if some, who have made a shew in the church, been chosen to important offices, and furnished with excellent gifts, do in the end prove hypocrites and traitors: "Let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall."

A desire of pre-eminence and distinction is very unsuitable to the followers of Jesus, who made himself the servant of all: very unbecoming the best of the children of men, who owe their breath to the mercy of God, have nothing that they can call their own, and have been unfaithful in the improvement of every talent. We allow, that every appearance of this is a blemish in the Christian character, and especially in a Christian minister; but if, on some occasion, and in some degree, human infirmity has wrought this way, though no example can justify it, yet those who, through ignorance of their own hearts, are too rigid censurers of others, may be reminded, that this evil frequently discovered itself in the apostles. They often disputed who should be the greatest; and when our Lord was speaking of his approaching sufferings, two of them chose that unreasonable



time to preclude the rest, and petitioned that they might have the chief seats in his kingdom. The first offence was theirs; but when the ten heard it, they were all moved with indignation, and shewed themselves equally desirous of superiority. It is plain therefore, that unless the apostles were hypocrites and mercenaries, some transient escapes of this sort (though confessedly criminal and indecent) are no sure proofs that such a person is not in the main sincere, disinterested, and truly devoted to the service of God and his gospel.

No less contrary to the meek and gracious spirit of Jesus is an angry zeal, expressing itself in terms of ill-will and bitterness to those who oppose or injure us. One of the highest attainments, and brightest evidences, of true grace, is from a sense of the love and example of Christ, to shew bowels of mercy and long-suffering to all men, and by perseverance in well doing to overcome evil with good. And a contrary behaviour (if frequent and notorious) will, like a dead fly in precious ointment, destroy the favour, if not the efficacy, of all we can attempt for the service of God in the world. However, if repeated falsehoods, and studied provocations, do sometimes, in an unguarded moment, extort from the disciples of Christ such expressions and marks of displeasure as in their cooler hours they willingly retract and sincerely repent of before God, this ought not to be exaggerated beyond bounds, as an offence inconsistent with their profession, at least not by any who would be afraid to speak dishonourably of the apostles James and John, who once went so far in their anger \* as to demand that fire might be sent from heaven to devour their adversaries.

We

\* Luke, ix. 54. They thought they were influenced by a commendable



We might proceed to other particulars; but enough has been said to shew the general resemblance which the preaching of the gospel in later times bears to our Lord's personal ministry: The doctrine is the same, the effects the same. It was, and it is to many, "a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence." The opposition it has met with has been always owing to the same evil principles of pride, and the love of sin, which are latent in every unrenewed heart: Though the pretexts are various, they may be reduced to a few leading motives which are always at work. The professors of this gospel have at no time been very numerous, if compared with those who have rejected it; and of these, too many have dishonoured or forsaken it. Neither have those who have received it most cordially, and been most desirous to adorn and promote it, been wholly exempt from mistakes and imperfections. The tenor of their conduct has proved them partakers of a more excellent spirit than others; their faith in Jesus has not been an empty notion, but fruitful of good works, such as no man could do except God was with him. They have been governed by higher motives, and devoted to nobler aims, than the world can either understand or bear;—yet they are deeply conscious of inherent infirmity, and

commendable zeal for their master, and that their proposal was warranted by an authorised precedent. We do not find that they ever wished for fire to consume the scribes and Pharisees, who were Christ's most inveterate enemies. But when the Samaritans rejected him, the vile Samaritans, whom they, upon a national prejudice, had been accustomed to hate; then their hearts deceived them, and they indulged their own corrupt passions, while they supposed they were animated by a zeal for Christ. Are we not often deceived in the same way? Can we not silently bear, or ingeniously extenuate, the faults and mistakes of our own party, while we are all zeal, and emotion, to expose, censure, and condemn what is amiss in others?

sometimes



sometimes (to their great grief) they give too visible proofs of it, which their watchful adversaries are glad to aggravate and charge upon them as consequences of their doctrine. This should induce all who love the Lord Jesus to redouble their guard, and to pray with David that they may be led in the right way because of their observers. If the question is concerning the infirmities, or even the vices of others, almost every one is ready to plead in their behalf; allowances are freely and largely made for human frailty, and none are willing to be thought harsh or censorious. But the believer in Jesus must look for no abatement or extenuation; even the professed admirers of candour and charity will not hesitate to put the worst construction upon all he says or does; for they are seeking occasion to wound the gospel through his misconduct. They are sensible that he is generally above them; and therefore rejoice to find or pretend a flaw, on which they may expatiate, to reduce him as near as possible to their own level; though if their censures are extended to their just consequence, they will (as we have seen) fall hard upon the apostles themselves.

I hope, that what I have said upon this subject will neither be misunderstood nor perverted. We do not defend even the infirmities of the best men; much less would we provide a plea for persecution or ambition. Let not the man, who supposes gain to be godliness, who makes the gospel a ladder whereby to climb the heights of worldly preferment, whose heart, like the insatiable fire, is craving more, and practising every art to accumulate wealth and honour in the church;—let not the proud man, who would lord it over conscience, and though unable to command fire from heaven, would gladly prepare fire and slaughter upon earth for all who will not venture their souls upon his faith;



faith;—let not these avail themselves of the examples of James and John: but rather let them tremble at the reflection, that while they manifest no part of the apostles graces, they are entirely possessed of those tempers, the smallest traces of which our Lord so severely rebuked in his disciples.

The first believers, though not faultless, were sincere: The natural disposition of their hearts was changed; they believed in Jesus; they loved him; they devoted themselves to his service; they submitted to his instructions, shared in his reproach, and could not be either enticed or intimidated to leave him. Their gracious master was their guide and guard, their advocate and counselor; when they were in want, in danger, in trouble, or in doubt, they applied to him, and found relief: hence they learned by degrees to cast all their care upon him. He corrected every wrong disposition; he pardoned their failings, and enabled them to do better. His precepts taught them true wisdom; and his own example, which to those who loved him had the force of a thousand precepts, was at once the model and the motive of their obedience. To make them ashamed of aspiring to be chief, he himself, though Lord of all, conversed among them as a servant, and condescended to wash their feet: to teach them forbearance and gentleness to their opposers, they saw him weep over his bitterest enemies, and heard him pray for his actual murderers.

Thus they gradually advanced in faith, love, and holiness, as the experience of every day disclosed to them some new discovery of the treasures of wisdom, grace, and power, residing in their Lord and Saviour: he explained to them in private the difficulties which occurred in his more public discourses; by his observations on the common occurrences



currences of life, he opened to them the mysterious volumes of creation and providence, which none but those whom he vouchsafes to teach can understand aright: he prayed for them, and with them, and taught them to pray for themselves: he revealed unto them the unseen realities of the eternal world, and supported them under the prospect of approaching trials; particularly of his departure from them, by assuring them that he was going on their behalf to prepare them a place in his kingdom, and that in a little time he would return to receive them to himself, that they might dwell with him for ever.

What he personally spoke to them, and acted in their presence, was recorded by his direction, and has been preserved by his providence for the use and comfort of his church: Though his enemies have raged horribly, they have not been able to suppress the divine volume; and, though invisible to mortal eyes, he is still near to all that seek him; and so supplies the want of his bodily presence by the secret communications of his Spirit, that his people have no reason to complain of any disadvantage: Though they see him not, they believe, love, rejoice, and obey; their attention and dependence are fixed upon him; they intrust him with all their concerns; they rely upon his promises; they behold him as their high-priest, advocate, and shepherd; they live upon his fulness, and plead his righteousness; and they find and feel that their reliance is not in vain.

The disciples were content for his sake to bear the scorn and injurious treatment of the world: they expected no better usage, nor desired an higher honour, than to be fellow-sufferers with their Lord. When he proposed returning to Judea, at a time they thought dangerous, and they could not alter his purpose, they did not wish to be left behind;



behind: "Let us go, (says one of them to the "rest), that we may die with him." It is true, when he was actually apprehended, the first shock of the trial was too strong, they forsook him and fled. He permitted this, both to exempt them from danger, and to let them know that of themselves they could do nothing. But it seems they did not go far. When Thomas afterwards said, "Except "I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, "and put my finger into the print of the nails, "and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe," he spoke like one who had been an eye-witness to his sufferings, and expresses an earnestness as if he still saw him wounded and bleeding. This catastrophe indeed almost disconcerted them; they had trusted it was he that should deliver Israel; but they saw him oppressed and slain by wicked men. From that time to his resurrection was a mournful interval, the darkest and most distressing period his church ever knew.

But the third day dispelled their grief: He returned victorious from the grave, proclaiming peace by the blood of the cross: he declared, and his appearance proved it, that the ransom was paid and accepted; and that having now overcome the sharpness of death, he had opened the kingdom of heaven to all believers. Then he spoke peace to their hearts: he opened their understandings to know the scriptures, and breathed upon them his Holy Spirit: he conversed frequently with them during forty days; gave them a large commission to preach his gospel, and an invaluable promise of his presence with them to the end of the world.

When he had thus confirmed them by those instructions and assurances, which his wisdom saw necessary, he was received up to heaven. They followed him with their hearts and eyes a while, and then returned to Jerusalem rejoicing. They  
were



were not ashamed of their crucified Lord, or unwilling to bear the contemptuous names of Galileans or Nazarenes for his sake. They were not afraid, as if left like sheep without a shepherd in the midst of their enemies: they knew, that tho' they could see him no more, his eye would be always upon them, and his ear open to their prayer: they waited, according to his command, for a farther supply of his Spirit, to qualify them for the important and difficult services which were before them. Nor did they wait long; a few days after his ascension, while they were praying with one heart and mind, the place where they were assembled was shaken as with a mighty wind; the Spirit of power and wisdom was abundantly communicated to them; they spoke with new tongues, and immediately began to preach boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus.

With this solemn and memorable event, I shall open the second book, and take up the thread of the gospel-history from that glorious day of divine power. The contents of this first book, namely, a brief view of the necessity and nature of the gospel-dispensation, the causes why it is and has been opposed, and the circumstances of the first believers, I have premised, as general principles, for my own and the readers assistance in the progress of the work.

It is much to be wished, that every reader might be impressed with the importance of our subject. It is not a point of curiosity, but of universal concern, and that in the highest and most interesting sense. Most of the researches and disquisitions which employ the time and talents of men, are of a trivial or indifferent nature. We may range on different sides concerning them; we may give or refuse, or retract our assent, when and as often as we please; we may be totally ignorant of them  
without

without loss, or be skilled in them all without deriving any solid comfort or advantage from them : but the gospel of Christ is not like the dry uninteresting theories of human wisdom ; it will either wound or heal, be a favour of life or of death, a source of endless comfort, or the occasion of aggravated condemnation to all that hear of it. To receive it, is to receive the earnest and assurance of eternal happiness ; to reject it, or remain wilfully ignorant of its characters and properties, will leave the soul oppressed with guilt, and exposed to the wrath of God for ever. It highly concerns us, therefore, to inquire, Whether we believe the gospel or no, whether what we call the gospel is the same that Christ and his apostles taught, and whether it has had the same or similar effects upon our hearts ? We live where the gospel is generally professed, and we are reputed Christians from our cradles ; but the word of God cautions us to take heed lest we be deceived. We see Christianity divided into innumerable sects and parties, each supported by names, arguments, and books, and fighting for the credit of a denomination : but how many forget, that in a little time all these divisions and subdivisions will be reduced to two ; the only real and proper distribution by which mankind, as to their religious character, ever was or will be distinguished, and according to which their final states will be speedily decided,—*The children of God, and the children of the wicked one.*





A  
R E V I E W  
O F  
ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

G 2



## B O O K II.

### Of the Second Period of Christianity.

[That I may neither incumber the series of the history with too many digressions, nor deprive myself of the opportunity of making such observations as the subject will suggest conducive to our main design, I propose, in the first chapter of this and the succeeding \* book, to give a succinct view of the progress and state of Christianity during each period; and then, by way of appendix, to add one or more chapters, as may be necessary, on such particulars as are of more immediate application to the circumstances of our own times.]

#### CHAP.

1. Of the progress of the Gospel from our Lord's Ascension to the close of the first century.
2. Of the life and character of St Paul considered as an exemplar or pattern of a Minister of Jesus Christ.
3. Of the irregularities and offences which appeared in the Apostolic Churches.
4. Of the Heresies propagated by false teachers in the Apostles days.

\* See the Preface.

## C H A P. I.

*Of the progress of the gospel from our Lord's ascension to the close of the first century.*

THE natural weakness of man is conspicuous in his most important undertakings: having no fund of sufficiency in himself, he is forced to collect all from without; and if the greatness of his preparations are not answerable to the extent of his designs, he has little hopes of success. Farther, when he has planned and provided to the utmost of his power, he is still subject to innumerable contingencies, which he can neither foresee nor prevent; and has often the mortification to see his fairest prospects blasted, and the whole apparatus of his labour and care only contribute to make his disappointment more conspicuous and painful.

The reverse of this is the character of the wonder-working God. To his power every thing is easy: he knows how to employ every creature and contingency as a means to accomplish his designs; not a seeming difficulty can intervene but by his permission, and he only permits it to illustrate his own wisdom and agency, in making it subservient to his will. Thus, having all hearts and events in his hands, he fulfils his own counsels with the utmost ease and certainty; and to shew that the work is his own, he often proceeds by such methods as vain men account weak and insignificant; producing the most extensive and glorious consequences from small and inconsiderable beginnings. Thus the Lord of hosts hath purposed to stain the pride of all human glory.

This observation might be confirmed by innumerable examples taken from the common history and



experience of mankind; but the subject of our present undertaking exhibits the most illustrious proof. When the Jews had seen Jesus crucified, dead, and buried, they expected to hear no more of him: his disciples were few, men of no authority, learning, or influence; and since their Master, who had made them such large promises, was at last unable to save himself from death, it was probably expected, that his followers would disperse of course, forsake their supposed delusions, and return to their fishing, and other employments suited to their capacities and talents.

They knew not that Jesus had arisen from the dead, and had frequently shewn himself to his servants, to comfort and confirm their hearts. They little thought that he, whom they had seen expire on the cross, was immoveably seated at the right hand of God, possessed of all power in heaven and earth; but his disciples knew this, and therefore continued to assemble in his name. We do not find that there was much notice taken of them till the feast of Pentecost, which was about ten days after his ascension. At this season \*, by the Jewish law, the first fruits of the earth were presented at the temple. An appointment, typical of those more sublime first fruits of spiritual gifts and graces with which the Lord on this day enriched his disciples, according to his promise, enabling them to preach his gospel, and make his word effectual to the conversion of a large multitude; as an earnest of that divine power, by which he would support and extend his church and ministry to the end of the world.

\* TIBERIUS, A.D. 33.] In fixing the dates of our history, I shall conform to what I think the most probable and authorized opinion, without perplexing either myself or my readers with the niceties of critical chronology.

When



When the hearts of God's people are united in love, and pleading his promises in the fervent exercise of faith and prayer, great things may be expected. Such was the happy state of the disciples on this solemn day: They were assembled with one accord; no jars or divisions had as yet taken place among them; they were animated with one desire, and praying with one mind. Suddenly and wonderfully they obtained an answer: The place they were in was shaken as by a mighty wind (1); their hearts were filled with the powerful energy of the Holy Spirit, and they were instantaneously enabled to speak languages which till then they were unacquainted with. These inward powers were accompanied with the visible symbols of fiery tongues, which sat upon each of their heads:—A fit emblem both of the new faculties they had received, and of the conquering, assimilating efficacy of the Spirit by whom they spoke; whose operations, like the fire, are vehement, penetrating, transforming, and diffusive; spreading from heart to heart, from place to place, till the flame, which was now confined within a few breasts, was communicated to many nations, people, and languages.

The effects of this divine communication were immediately manifest; they were filled with love, joy, and faith, and began boldly and publicly to praise God. Their emotion and zeal could not be long unnoticed: Those who first observed it, spoke of it to others, and a rumour was spread abroad. Jerusalem was at that time the occasional resort of the Jews and Jewish proselytes, who were dispersed throughout the known world, and multitudes had come from different countries to celebrate the feast. The promiscuous throng, who assembled upon the report, and had been accustomed to different lan-

(1) Acts, ii.



guages, were therefore greatly astonished to hear of the wonderful works of God, every man in his own tongue. While some expressed their surprise at this, others ascribed it to the effects of wine, and shewed their scorn and despite to the Spirit of grace, by reviling the apostles as drunkards. Thus they no sooner entered upon their public service, than they began to find the same treatment which their Lord had met with, and were for his sake the subjects of calumny and derision. This is a remarkable instance of the sagacity and temper which the men of the world discover in the judgement they form of a work of God: nor is it probable, that our modern reasoners would have judged more favourably, if they could have been present at such a scene, where several persons were speaking loud at the same time, and each in a different language: since they account the operations of the same Spirit madness and folly, even where they are not attended with such extraordinary circumstances.

This weak and perverse slander was immediately refuted by the Apostle Peter, who addressed the people in a grave and solemn discourse; and having in few words explained the nature of the fact, and shewn that it was an accomplishment of ancient prophecies, he proceeded to apply himself more closely to their consciences. He assured them that what they saw and heard was wrought by the power of Jesus of Nazareth, whom they had rejected before Pilate. He informed them of that honour and glory which he now possessed, and charged them as accomplices in the murder of a person whose character and dignity God had vindicated by raising him from the dead. Though our Saviour had but few disciples during his personal ministry, he had doubtless left a deep impression of his words and works in the hearts of many.

This



This discourse of Peter would naturally recal him to the remembrance of those who had seen him in the flesh, and lead them to reflect how earnestly and unjustly they had, at the instigation of their priests, compelled Pilate to put him to death. These reflections, the closeness of Peter's address, and the power of the Spirit of God, concurred to give them a deep conviction of their sin: they were pierced to the heart: they no longer wondered as curious spectators, but were solicitous for themselves, and cried out, Brethren, what shall we do? Peter then proceeded to open the treasure of gospel-grace, and to direct them to Jesus whom they had crucified for salvation. The effect of this day's preaching (for though only Peter is named, it is probable there were more than one preacher or one discourse) was signally happy. Three thousand souls were converted, and, professing their faith and repentance, were by baptism publicly joined to the church.

A further addition was soon after made: Peter and John (1) having recovered a man from incurable lameness by faith in the name of Jesus, the report of the miracle brought a great concourse of people together a second time. Peter improved the occasion to preach to them at the temple-gate, to the purport of his former discourse. He had an attentive auditory, and his word was made effectual to the conversion of many. But by this time the enemies of Jesus were greatly alarmed at the progress of his doctrine; and having \* notice of what  
had

(1) Acts, iii.

\* Acts, iv. 16. 17. Many consultations have been held, and devices framed, to stop the progress of the gospel, as if it was a dangerous infection. But all such attempts are vain; they may as easily restrain the dawning of the day as suppress the spreading of the gospel. When the Lord is pleased to raise up fit instruments

to



had passed, the priests and Sadducees violently apprehended Peter, with John, and put them in prison. He had not finished his discourse; but he had said enough to be remembered: and this interruption, with the boldness of his following defence, made his words more regarded. The next day they were brought before the high priest, rulers, and elders; and being asked concerning the late miracle, Peter, who once had trembled at the voice of a girl, was not afraid to use the utmost freedom and plainness with the council and heads of the Jewish nation. He confessed the name and cause of Jesus, reminded them of their wickedness in causing him to be crucified, and in direct answer to their question, assured them that the miracle was wrought in his name, and by his power. Tho' the council were highly offended with this language, and the more so, as they observed the persons who spoke were private and unlettered men; yet, being unable to deny the fact, for the man who had been lame stood before them, and unwilling to incur the odium of punishing an action they were ashamed to disapprove, they dissembled their rage, and forbidding the apostles to speak any more to the people, they dismissed them: Yet they did not depart until they had protested against this inhibition, and declared their resolution to obey God rather than men.

The believers, though numerous, amounting to many thousands, lived in harmony and love, as children of one family. The greater part of them were poor; those therefore who had estates or money willingly put their all into a common stock for

to promote it, and to vouchsafe a season of refreshment from his presence, then its influence cannot be restrained: a spark becomes a flame, a little one a multitude, and opposition only makes the effects more visible and noticed.

the



the use of the whole, which was intrusted to the care of the apostles. This is recorded as an instance of the benevolent and disinterested spirit with which the gospel inspired them, but is not enjoined as a precedent to be universally observed, since we have many proofs, that the usual distinctions in civil life were retained in other churches planted by the apostles; and it soon gave occasion to discover, that in the best societies there may be found some unworthy intruders, and that very specious actions may be performed from base and dishonourable motives. Even under this richest dispensation of grace, there were some professors influenced by no higher motives than hypocrisy and vain glory. Ananias (1), with his wife Sapphira, attempted to impose on the apostles by a concerted lie, and would have had the praise of giving their whole substance, when their avarice would only permit them to spare a part. As a warning to all pretenders, who seek to join or serve the church from sordid and selfish views, Peter, by the direction of the Holy Ghost, denounced a severe sentence against this unhappy pair, and they both fell dead \* at his feet. The cause and suddenness of their death was a vindication of the apostles integrity and authority, and a seasonable admonition to others, to deter any from attempting to associate with the disciples, who were not in heart devoted to the Lord.

The numbers of the believers still increased, and the report of the apostles doctrine and miracles extended from Jerusalem to the adjacent parts. The priests and Sadducees therefore soon renewed their

\* The apostolic censures were not like the papal anathemas, *bruta fulmina*, words without effect; they were accomplished in an instant. See Acts, xiii. 12.

(1) Acts, v.



efforts to suppress them : they apprehended the apostles again, and put them in the common prison as malefactors ; but the Lord, to confirm the faith and courage of his people, and to shew how easily he can protect those who serve him, delivered them the same night by his angel. In the morning, when their enemies were met, and commanded them to be brought to their tribunal, they were surprised to hear that the prison-doors were found secure, and the prisoners all escaped. They were, however, soon informed that they were not gone far, but were preaching boldly to the people, as the angel had directed them, regardless of their adversaries designs against them. They were alarmed at this notice, and began to be apprehensive of the event \* ; yet, hurried on by their enmity to Jesus and his gospel, they once more sent their officers to take them, which they attempted in the mildest manner possible ; for, as the prosecution was groundless and malicious, they were not without fear lest the multitude should interpose : but they had to do with the followers of Jesus, who would countenance no tumult in their own favour, and were neither afraid nor ashamed to confess his name in the face of danger. The apostles therefore peaceably yielded themselves, and being brought before the council, were severely questioned for disregarding the late prohibition they had received. Peter and the rest answered with their usual firmness ; they avowed the fact, and their determination to persevere †, and charged them as the betrayers and

\* Acts, v. 24. It is not only a fruitless, but a very uneasy undertaking, to fight against the truth, and those who profess it. The boldest and wisest champions in this desperate cause are often brought to their wits end, and to foresee their own disappointment.

† Peter and the apostles answered, " We ought to obey God rather than men." It should seem that this (if any) may be called



and murderers of Jesus in stronger terms than before. The majority of the council were exceedingly enraged at their boldness; they were cut to the heart, and consulted to put them to death. But the more moderate advice of Gamaliel prevailed. He shewed them, from some recent instances, that if this new sect was no more than an human institution, they need not give themselves trouble to suppress it, for it would soon sink and disappear of itself; but if it was indeed of God, their opposition would be not only in vain, but in effect a rebellion against God himself: he therefore recommended milder methods; and having considerable repute among them for his wisdom, the rest assented to him. In this manner the Lord, who has the hearts of all in his power, delivered the apostles a third time, by raising them an advocate from amongst their enemies; yet, to save appearances, and that it might not be thought the council had proceeded so far without good cause, they were not dismissed till they had been scourged, and again enjoined silence. They departed, rejoicing that they had the honour to suffer disgrace \* for the sake of Christ, and returned to encourage their companions; continuing still

ed a natural maxim, and that the rudest savage, or the least child that can be made to understand the terms, must assent to the truth of the proposition, as readily as they perceive that *two and two* make four: how strange then is it, that men of the greatest parts and penetration in other things so seldom receive it! There are few periods to be found, even in the Christian church, in which those who steadily acted upon this principle were not considered as heretics of the worst sort.

\* Here were faith and love in exercise: to suffer reproach for Christ was in their esteem an honour and privilege. It is mournful to observe how little of this spirit is to be found amongst us. How soon are we offended and troubled when our names are reproached! how uneasy to lie under contempt! how impatient to justify ourselves, and to be thought well of by all persons! Far from accounting it an honour to be made conformable to Jesus in this respect, we feel it a burden which we are restless to shake off:



still publicly, and from house to house, to teach and preach in the name of Jesus.

These were happy times (1), when the whole company of the faithful were of one heart and mind, firmly united in affection, sentiment, ordinance, and practice. Their adversaries, though angry, and desirous to injure them, were powerfully restrained by the Divine Providence; so that they enjoyed peace in the midst of war, and were favoured with much grace in their hearts, and a daily increase in their numbers. Yet it was not long before an occasion arose which might have had unhappy effects, if the wisdom and authority of the apostles had not provided an early remedy. The church as yet consisted only of Jewish believers; but these were distinguished into Jews properly so called, that is, natives and inhabitants of Judea, and Hellenists or Grecians, the name given to those of the Jewish race and profession who had been dispersed and settled in the Heathen countries. Many of these, as has been observed, were at that time in Jerusalem, and among the first converts to the gospel. As the multitude who were supplied out of the common stock was very great, it is no wonder if a few individuals were overlooked: some unavoidable instances of this sort gave rise to a complaint, not only of negligence, but partiality, in the distribution of the money; and the Hellenists, or strangers, thought the others had an undue preference shewn them. The apostles, though upright and impartial, were unable to do every thing themselves; and therefore, to prevent such

off: yet it must be borne, or we must give up profession and all; for neither are our characters more respectable than the first Christians, nor is the world better reconciled to the things of God now than it was then.

(1) Acts, vi.

mistakes



mistakes and suspicions, and that they might devote their whole time and attention to the more important services of the ministry, they entirely divested themselves of the pecuniary charge; and, by their advice, seven men were chosen, on whom, by prayer and imposition of hands, they solemnly devolved this trust. Thus the office of deacons was instituted. They were men full of wisdom and the Holy Ghost; and to them the care of the public money, and the support of the poor, was peculiarly confided. Some of them, perhaps all, were occasionally preachers; but this was no part of their office as deacons. By this expedient, the cause of murmuring was taken away, and the peace of the church confirmed.

TIBERIUS, A. D. 34.] Thus the gospel flourished, in defiance of opposition. The Jews, provoked more and more, began to lose all patience; the mild counsels of Gamaliel could no longer restrain them; but their blinded passions hurried them to the last extremities. Stephen, one of the seven deacons newly elected, was the first who received the honour and crown of martyrdom. His zeal for the truth did not begin with his new office; though it is probable his undertaking that charge might place him more in view, and expose him more immediately to persecution. Promotions in the world are attended with worldly advantages; but such promotions in the church as are agreeable to the Spirit of God, will rather intitle a man to a larger share of labours and sufferings, and the painful pre-eminence of standing in the forefront of the battle, to sustain the hottest brunt of every storm. Stephen was no sooner a public person, than he became the mark of public opposition. At first they pretended to dispute with him; but when they were unable to resist the wisdom and spirit by which he spake, they had recourse to more ef-

H 2.

fectual



fectual methods to silence him; they suborned false witnesses, a main instrument of persecution, against him; and having framed such an accusation as was most likely to alarm the prejudice, and inflame the rage of the people, they brought him before the council, and charged him, that he had spoken blasphemous words against Moses and against God. Stephen, tho' alone, and unsupported in the midst of furious enemies, appeared firm and unmoved as a rock in the midst of waves: he was not only devoid of fear, but filled with joy (1): the testimony of a good conscience, the honour of suffering for his Lord, and a sense of the love of God shed abroad in his heart, not only preserved his soul in peace, but spread a lustre and glory upon his countenance; so that all who sat in the council, looking upon him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel. In such a disposition, he thought it not worth while to attempt his own defence, but employed the whole time allotted him in behalf of his adversaries, that, if possible, by a distinct review of God's dealing with their nation, and their behaviour towards him, he might engage them to consider their ways, to repent, and believe the gospel. While he spake of the things that had been long since transacted, and kept within the bounds of Moses, David, and Solomon, they had patience to hear him; but when he began to make application to themselves with that warmth and plainness which the case required, they could bear no more: his words cut them to the heart: they no longer preserved the exterior gravity of their stations and characters, but gnashed at him with their teeth, as though they would have devoured him alive.

But vain are the attempts of men to intimidate

(1) Acts, vii.

those



those whom the Lord is pleased to comfort. He is always near to support his faithful servants, and can manifest himself in a way which the world knows nothing of. Such a seasonable and sufficient discovery he made of himself to Stephen. As he looked stedfastly up to heaven, silently appealing from the injustice of his judges, he saw the heavens opened, and Jesus standing in glory at the right hand of God, as attending to all that passed, and ready to receive him to himself. Transported with this divine assurance, he was not at leisure to drop a single word to soften his incensed enemies: he endeavoured to communicate the glorious idea with which his soul was filled; and, without regarding the sure consequences of such a declaration, he told them plainly what he saw. This determined their resolves. Hitherto they had been willing to preserve the form at least of a judicial process; but now, renouncing every restraint, and unmindful of their late acknowledgement to Pilate, that it was not lawful for them to put any man to death, they stopped their ears, to shut out any remonstrance that might be offered, dragged him violently out of the city, and stoned him to death. His dying deportment, which shewed how eminently he was filled with the Spirit of Jesus, whom he saw, is recorded as a fit pattern for the imitation of all who should be called to suffer for the truth in succeeding times. He kneeled down with the sweetest composure; and having committed his departing soul into his Redeemer's hands, his only remaining concern was for his murderers; and his last breath was a prayer that this sin might not be laid to their charge. Such resolution in the defence of truth, such calmness under sufferings, such tenderness and compassion towards those who oppose, are the surest marks of a high attainment in Christianity.



The death of Stephen, far from satiating the rage of the rulers (1), rather animated and excited them to new mischief. They observed no farther measures, but gave full vent to their cruelty, and raised a general persecution against the church. A young man, named *Saul*, whom the Lord, from before his birth, had designed for a nobler service, was at this time one of their most zealous and active instruments: he had been a consenting spectator of Stephen's death, and kept the raiment of those that slew him. Encouraged by their example, he soon entered upon action himself, and made havock of the church, forcibly entering into their houses, and dragging many to prison, both men and women. The disciples, therefore, according to their Lord's direction (2), gave way to the storm, and dispersed themselves throughout Judea and Samaria, spreading the knowledge of the gospel wherever they went. Thus the methods taken to suppress the truth, proved (as they often have since) the means of promoting its progress; yet the Lord, who appoints limits beyond which the fiercest attempts of men cannot pass, preserved the apostles in safety at Jerusalem, where he had farther occasion for their service. Amongst the many who left the city was Philip, another of the deacons: he preached Christ and his gospel in Samaria; performed many cures and miracles among the people; and a great number received faith, and were baptized. Here the gospel triumphed over the illusions of Simon, surnamed *Magus*, or *the Sorcerer*, who, by his vain arts and arrogant pretensions, had long held the people in subjection and astonishment. But the superior power of truth dispelled the charm; his votaries forsook him; and even the impostor himself was so far convinced that

(1) Acts, viii.

(2) Matth. x. 23.



Philip acted by that divine power and authority to which he had only pretended, that he professed himself a believer likewise, and behaved so fairly that Philip admitted him to baptism without suspicion; but when, soon after, Peter \* and John came to Samaria, to communicate the gifts of the Holy Ghost to the new disciples by imposition of hands, Simon discovered his true character; he offered money for a power to impart the same gifts: A proposal which shewed his ignorance, wickedness, and ambition, in the strongest light, and proved him an entire stranger to the grace of God. From him the hateful practice of merchandizing in spiritual concerns has derived the name of *Simony*; a crime which, though condemned by the laws of every Christian country, as highly injurious and † reproachful to the gospel of Christ, no laws or obligations have hitherto been able

\* Acts, viii. 14. "They sent Peter and John." We find nothing in this book to countenance the pre-eminence which the Papists ascribe to Peter. He and John were deputed by all the apostles, and went upon equal terms. Peter did not send John, nor go himself, without the advice and direction of the rest. John had once desired to call for fire from heaven upon the Samaritans; but he was now better instructed, and gladly went to impart to them the best gifts he could bestow. If the Lord is pleased to make any partakers of the same precious faith with ourselves, though they were once enemies, we should gladly forget all that is past, and receive them as dear brethren and intimate friends.

† In these abuses the church of Rome seems to derive rather from Simon Magus than from Simon Peter; yet it is to be wished such practices were confined to the church of Rome only. Our laws have guarded against them by a very solemn and circumstantial oath; but that this oath, if not literally broken, is often scandalously evaded, we need no other proof, than the shameful advertisements which frequently appear in our public papers; not to say, that though there is no money in the case, yet all presentations, exchanges, and advancements, that are transacted upon interested views, are so far simoniacal in the sight of him who judges the heart.



to suppress. Peter severely rebuked his hypocrisy, yet exhorted him to repentance and prayer. His words seemed to have some weight with Simon for the present; but we hear no more of him among the believers: on the contrary, he is recorded in history as an inveterate enemy to the faith and purity of the gospel, and the author of those wild, absurd, and impure heresies, which disturbed the first ages of the church.

About this time an eunuch, or great officer, of Candace Queen of Ethiopia, who had been worshipping at Jerusalem, (which makes it probable that he was a proselyte to the faith of the God of Israel), was returning homeward. Though this nobleman had been at Jerusalem, he had either not heard of the apostles and their new doctrines, or, being influenced by the priests and rulers, had not thought them worthy his notice. He was going home ignorant as he came; but the Lord, who is mindful of his people when they think not of him, appoints the time and the means of bringing them to the knowledge of the truth; and these are often seemingly precarious and contingent, that the work may more clearly be known to be his, and the praise ascribed to his power and providence. Philip, by the direction of an angel, intercepted the Ethiopian upon the road: he found him well employed, reading the Prophet Isaiah as he sat in his chariot: he had a very confused idea of the passage he was reading; but he knew it contained an important meaning, and was desirous to discover it. Those who have a just sense of the excellence of the scripture, and peruse it, as he did, with a sincere intention to be instructed by it, may be encouraged from this instance to persevere, though they find it at present hard to be understood: he who gave them the desire will in due time provide them a teacher, and make dark things plain to them.



them. When Philip drew near, and asked him, without ceremony, if he understood what he read? he was not offended with the abruptness of his address, but courteously invited him to sit with him, confessing his ignorance, and the need he had of assistance. The passage which had perplexed him afforded Philip a fair opportunity of preaching Jesus: the eunuch believed, and was baptized in a water they were passing by. In this case there seems to have been no exertion of an outward miracle to confirm the word. Nor was it necessary: the manner of Philip's meeting with him, the suitability of the question to the dubious state of his mind, and the discovery he obtained, that the prophetic marks of the Messiah exactly coincided with the history of Jesus, afforded him sufficient evidence. The only extraordinary circumstance was the sudden disappearing of Philip; who, having performed his service, was removed by the power of the Spirit to Azotus, a place thirty miles distant; from whence, proceeding along the sea-coast, he preached at Joppa, Lydia, and all the intermediate places, till he came to Cæsarea. In the mean time the eunuch, rejoicing in the Lord's goodness, pursued his journey to Ethiopia. We have no farther account of him in the New Testament; but some ancient writers assure us, that he was the means of propagating the faith which he had received, first in his own country, and afterwards in places still more remote.

TIBERIUS, A. D. 35.] The church having suffered much from the violence of the persecution, the Lord was pleased to afford them intermission, and to give a remarkable proof of the power of his grace (1), by the conversion of Saul, one of their fiercest opposers. He had been educated a

(1) Acts, ix.

Pharisee,



Pharisee, in a zealous attachment to the law, and from a mistaken principle of conscience, thought it his duty to suppress the followers of Jesus. The warmth of his temper prompted him to uncommon earnestness against them; and as he was a young man, he was probably farther instigated by a desire to ingratiate himself with the Jewish rulers. Not content with the mischief he had done at Jerusalem, he still breathed out threatenings and slaughter against them, and meditated their destruction even in distant places. With this view he obtained letters of authority from the chief priests, and set out for Damascus, that if he found any disciples there, he might bring them bound with him to Jerusalem. Little was he aware of the event of his journey! Little did the believers imagine, that the man who now thirsted for their blood, would soon be their companion and leader! The Lord often permits those to whom he shews mercy, to run great previous lengths in their obstinacy and ignorance: their subsequent change is hereby more noticed, the riches of his grace are more remarkably exemplified for the encouragement of others; and such persons, from a lively sense of their past wickedness, and the undeserved favour they have received, are usually more strongly impressed with a sense of divine love, and more warmly devoted to his service. Some such there have been in every period of the church, and especially whenever there has been a remarkable revival of the power of godliness. When Saul was drawing near to Damascus, perhaps within sight of the city, anticipating his bloody designs, and exulting in thought over the defenceless sheep of Christ, whom he had been taught to consider as schismatics and heretics, who deserved to be extirpated from the face of the earth, he was suddenly surrounded by a glorious light, exceeding the brightness



brightness of the mid-day sun, and heard a voice, not of uncertain application, but expostulating with him by name, "Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?" If he was alarmed at the question, he was much more so, when, upon asking, "Who art thou, Lord?" he was answered, "I am Jesus the Nazarene \*, whom thou persecutest." So nearly is the Lord interested in his people, and so dangerous is it to injure them: he accounts their cause, their sufferings, their enemies, his own. The Nazarene was an epithet of contempt affixed to the name of Jesus by those who hated him †; and it is probable that Saul had often spoke of him in these terms; but now he found himself in the Nazarene's power, and unable either to escape or to plead; he fell to the earth trembling, and astonished beyond expression: he not only heard his voice, but saw his person (1); an interview which he could not have sustained a moment, if the glory of Jesus had not been tempered with the milder beams of grace and love. The Lord spared him, accepted his feeble surrender of himself, moderated his fears, and dismissed him to Damascus, as a willing trophy of his victorious grace, and a singular instance how easily he can subdue the hardest hearts to himself. The brightness of the vision had overpowered his bodily eyes, so that he was led by the hand; but the eyes of his mind were opened; his heart, his aims, were changed; he was become a new man, and, instead of threatenings and slaughter, he now breathed prayer and devotion to Jesus, and love to his people. He re-

\* This is the exact import of the Greek, *Ἰησοῦς ὁ Ναζωραῖος*, Acts, xxii. 8.

† And for this reason inserted in the title which Pilate put over his cross.

(1) Acts, ix. 27.; 1 Cor. xv. 2.

mained



mained at Damascus three days without sight or food: but the Lord remembered his distress, and sent to him a disciple named Ananias, who, from the character he had heard of him, was at first greatly surprised at the command he received to go to such a person; but the Lord condescended to acquaint him, that Saul was a chosen instrument, whom he had appointed to do and suffer great things for his sake. When Ananias laid his hands on him, a thick film, resembling scales, fell from his eyes; his sight was restored, his mind composed, and he was immediately baptized. Saul had several companions with him in his journey, who saw the dazzling light, heard the sound of the voice which spoke to him, and fell to the ground with surprise as he did; they knew enough of the circumstances of the case to witness for him, that he neither imposed upon others nor himself; but we have no account that any of them were converted, the most extraordinary occurrences being insufficient to change the heart, without the interposition of divine grace.

Thus the late persecuting Saul was numbered with the disciples, and soon distinguished himself amongst them: He now knew by experience the wickedness and danger of opposing the gospel, and was desirous to repair the mischief of his former rage and ill example. A sense of the mercy he had received, and compassion for the souls of others, made him seek every opportunity to persuade and convince the Jews, his former companions and brethren; but he soon found the same treatment from them, which he himself had often offered to the disciples. They opposed and vilified him as an apostate, and at length consulted to kill him: his former zeal in their cause was forgot, or, if remembered, it was an argument suited to inflame their resentment. But no counsel can prevail



vail against those whom the Lord protects. Saul had timely notice of their designs, and because they watched the gates of the city incessantly, he was let down by a basket \* over the wall ; for though he neither distrusted his cause nor his protector, he was not unmindful to employ prudent means for his preservation. But before this he had made some excursions from Damascus, and visited Arabia ; for his own words assure us, that it was not till the third year after his conversion that he returned to Jerusalem. In this interval the Lord, who had appeared to him in the way, by subsequent revelations, fully instructed him in the knowledge of his will, and qualified him for the apostolical office ; so that he could afterwards say, that he received neither his authority nor his information from men. When he came to Jerusalem he would have joined himself to the disciples, but they, remembering his former conduct, and not clearly informed of the manner and reality of his change, were at first afraid of him. They had a right to be satisfied of his sincerity. But being soon afterwards introduced by Barnabas, he related to them the means of his conversion, and the occasion of his leaving Damascus. He continued for some time in Jerusalem and the neighbourhood, preaching and disputing in the name of the Lord Jesus. The Jews, who hated all the servants of Christ, could not but be particularly enraged at him, who had forsaken their party : against him, therefore, they chiefly set themselves, and making

\* 2 Cor. xi. 33. " Through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall." The Lord often confounds the pride of his enemies by the manner in which he delivers his servants: he permits violent oppositions, and great preparations, to be made against them, and then disconcerts the combinations of the many, and the mighty, by feeble and unthought-of means.



repeated attempts to kill him, he withdrew again from Judea, and went through Syria to Tarsus, in Cilicia, his native place.

CALIGULA, A. D. 38.] Upon his recess the churches in Judea, Samaria, and Galilee, had an interval of rest\*. The Jews, about this time, were taken up with their own affairs. Caligula, who had lately succeeded Tiberius in the empire, presumed to arrogate divine worship to himself, and commanded altars and temples to be erected to his honour: he was readily obeyed in many places; but when he required his statue to be put up in the temple at Jerusalem, the Jewish nation engaged as one man to prevent it†. They had rejected the holy one and the true, and the troubles were now beginning to take place, which ended at length in their total ruin and extirpation. Against this first affront and profanation intended to their temple, they united in earnest supplications to Petronius, the governor of Syria, and, with much entreaty, obtained permission to send their deputies to the Emperor, who was, though with great difficulty, prevailed on to desist from his purpose as to the temple; but, at the same time, he forbade them, under the severest penalties, to oppose the erection or dedication of temples to him, in any place without the city of Jerusalem. This injunction encouraged their enemies to affront their religion where-ever they pleased, and laid a foundation for

\* The churches had rest, and walked in the fear of the Lord, and the comforts of the Holy Ghost, and were edified and multiplied, Acts, ix, 31. Some well-meaning persons seem to forget this passage, when they take it for granted, that the work of God cannot flourish, except there is a violent outward opposition against it. The world will dislike the gospel; but it is possible in some measure to put to silence the ignorance of foolish men by well-doing; and the Lord can, and often does, favour his people with peace, and put their enemies under restraint.

‡ Josephus, de Bell. Jud. lib. 2.

- innumerable



innumerable disturbances and dissensions, in which the Jews, whether aggressors or not, were always the greatest sufferers. While they were thus distracted among themselves, the believers enjoyed a favourable respite, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comforts of the Holy Ghost, were edified and increased.

A. D. 39.] As Peter had formerly seconded the labours of Philip, the deacon at Samaria, he now visited those places where he had preached on his way to Cæsarea, and strengthened the disciples he found there, by his doctrine and miracles. At Lydda \* he restored a man to immediate health, who had been many years ill of a dropsy. Being afterwards invited to Joppa, he raised Tabitha or Dorcas to life, to the great joy of the poor and the widows, whom she had assisted by her alms and labours. While he made some stay here, his commission was enlarged, and he received direction from the Lord to communicate the gospel to the Gentiles, which had hitherto been restrained to the Jews, except in the case of the eunuch, for which Philip had been authorised by the express command of an angel.

When our Lord sent forth the apostles to preach while he was yet upon earth, he expressly confined

\* Acts, ix. 32. "He came to the saints at Lydda." The scripture does not use the word *saint* in the narrow and appropriate sense of some, or with that improper extent which others have given to it in after times; it is neither peculiar to apostles and fathers, nor applicable to all who bear it in the Roman calendar, but it is the common appellation of all who believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and are saved from sin and condemnation by his grace. There have been saints in all ages, but real saints (while living) have usually been branded with opprobrious names. The world, which knows not Christ, cannot distinguish his people, but will rather give the title of saints to many who have hated and persecuted the gospel.



their mission to the house of Israel; and though, after his resurrection, he commanded them to disciple all nations, they did not immediately understand the extent of his meaning; though they were under an infallible guidance, they were not fully instructed at once, but received intimations of their duty from time to time, as circumstances varied, and as the designs of Divine Providence were successively opening. The great Shepherd and head of the church has an appointed time and manner for the accomplishment of all his purposes; nothing can be effectually done but when and where he pleases: but when his hour is come, then hard things become easy, and crooked things straight; his word, Spirit, and providence, then will all concur to make the path of duty plain to those who serve him, though perhaps, till this knowledge is necessary, he permits them to remain ignorant of what he has designed them for. By this discipline they are taught to depend entirely upon him, and are afterwards more fully assured that he has sent and succeeded them. Peter was not yet freed from the Jewish prejudice, that all intercourse with the Heathens was unlawful; or if he had been so himself, he could not have easily convinced the many thousands of his brethren who laboured under the same mistake. This service was therefore pointed out to him by means which left no room for doubt in his own mind, and enabled him fully to vindicate his conduct to others.

Cornelius (1), a Roman centurion or captain, with his family and dependents, were the first fruits of the Gentile converts. He lived at Cæsarea, a city not far from Joppa, and which was the ordinary residence of the Roman governors; and therefore promiscuously inhabited by Gentiles and

(1) Acts, x.

Jews.



Jews. It is not probable that he had never heard of Christ, or the new institution that was spreading under his name; but, without doubt, what he knew of it was only from public rumour, in which the misrepresentations of malice, and the surmises of ignorance, usually so far prevail, that persons of the best dispositions are often deterred from making those inquiries which the importance of truth deserves. But the Lord, whom he knew not, had been gradually preparing him for the reception of the gospel: he was already reclaimed from idolatry; he was a devout worshipper of God, exemplary in his family, just in his dealings, and charitable to the poor. How few of those now called Christians can equal his character while a stranger to the gospel, we may collect from daily observation: yet those who plead for the sufficiency of what they style natural religion, would do well to observe, that though he was in many respects a good man, and his sincerity was approved by God himself; yet he lacked one thing. But none who are made sincerely desirous to know the will of God shall be left finally destitute: he will find a way to give them necessary information. Cornelius, who had often waited upon God by fasting and prayer, and had, doubtless, at times felt that suspense and anxiety which can only be entirely removed by a clear knowledge of the gospel-covenant, obtained at length an illustrious answer: an angel appeared to him, assured him that his prayer was heard, and directed him to send for Peter, who should inform him more fully of his duty.

It is observable, that though the angel was so minutely exact in his directions, as to mention the street and the very house where Peter resided, he said not a word of the gospel to Cornelius, but referred him wholly to Peter. The wisdom and goodness of God is pleased to make his people in-



strumental in teaching each other. This not only secures the honour of the success to him alone, but it conduces to their comfort and advantage. An angel could only speak historically, *that the thing is so*; but it comes nearer to our level when delivered by men who have been in the very case of others, and can say experimentally, *that they have found it so*. Who so fit to commend the physician's skill and tenderness as those who have been themselves cured by him of a desperate disease? Peter had himself tasted that the Lord was gracious; he had greatly sinned, yet had been freely forgiven; he had seen his excellent glory upon the mount, and had received an express commission from his mouth. In these, and other respects, he was a proper person to proclaim him to others, more so than an angel from heaven. We may therefore safely infer, *a fortiori*, that no man, however great his talents may otherwise be, can be qualified or fit to preach the gospel, until he has known the evil of sin himself, and been a partaker of the pardoning grace of God through a crucified Redeemer.

Cornelius was not disobedient to the heavenly vision: his example and instructions had been a blessing to his household, so that he had servants about him to whom he could communicate this extraordinary event, and depend on their fidelity. Having related his vision to them, he sent them to Joppa, to invite Peter to his house.

When they departed from Cæsarea, Peter was under the influence of the national prejudice, which would hardly have permitted him to have gone with them; but, while they were on the journey, the Lord prepared his mind to comply. The time was now come \*, when it was necessary  
he

\* In the Lord's dispensations in favour of his people, there is often



he should know the extensive designs of God in favour of sinners of all nations, people, and languages; and that the partition-wall between Jews and Gentiles was broken down and taken away by the death of Christ. He received this intimation by a vision, which exactly corresponded in its circumstances with the case in hand. About noon, the following day, when the messengers were near to Joppa, he was retired to the top of the house, for the convenient exercise of secret prayer, and having an appetite for food, he saw, as it were, a large sheet or wrapper let down from heaven, suspended by the four corners, containing all sorts of beasts, birds, and reptiles, without any regard to the ceremonial distinction of clean and unclean: this appearance was accompanied with a voice directing him, To slay and eat. When he answered, That he had never yet transgressed the law, by eating unclean food; the voice replied, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common or unclean. To impress the whole upon his mind, and to convince him that the vision was real and significant, it was repeated three times. When it was finally withdrawn, and while he was thinking what it might import \*, the men sent by Cornelius were inquiring for him at the door below: of

often a counterpart, resembling that which is related in this chapter. The minds of two or more persons are inclined, by different means, to concur in the same design, though perhaps they are far asunder, and know nothing of each other's intentions: in time, circumstances fall out which connect their views, and prove that the whole was from the Lord.

\* Peter was faithful to the light he had already received, and did not hastily follow the first impulse upon his mind: though the liberty seemed to be authorised by a voice from heaven, he did not accept it without consideration. His example should be considered by those who give themselves up to the influence of every sudden impression, without taking time to consider its nature and tendency, and how far it is consistent with the revealed will of God.

which



which receiving previous notice by the secret suggestion of the spirit of God, and being directed to go with them without hesitation, he went down and spoke to them before they had time to send him word of their arrival by the people of the house. When he had heard their business, and compared the vision of Cornelius with his own, he scrupled no longer; but lodging the strangers that night, he accompanied them the next day, taking with him five of the brethren from Joppa, to be witnesses of what the Lord intended to do. Cornelius, who earnestly expected his arrival, had assembled his friends and dependents against his coming: he received Peter before them all with the greatest respect and cordiality, and gave him a particular account of what had passed, professing that both he and his friends were ready to receive and obey his instructions. Peter now perceived and acknowledged the great truth the Lord had pointed out by so many harmonizing circumstances, That the blessings of the gospel were no longer to be confined to the Jews, but that Jesus was appointed to be a light to enlighten \* the Gentiles also. In his

\* Acts, x. 34. Few passages of scripture seem to have been more misunderstood and misrepresented than this and the following verse. As some have presumed, that St Paul's doctrine of justification is corrected, if not confuted, by St James; so the Apostle Peter has been supposed to contradict both St Paul and himself (see 1 Pet. i. 1. 2.) in another important truth of the gospel. This mistake is more excusable in those who do not understand the original; but those who do ought not to avail themselves of an ambiguous word. The Greek *προσωπον*, from whence *προσωποπολις* is derived, does not convey the same idea that an English reader receives from the word *person*; it does not properly signify a personal identity, but the outward appearance and circumstance of a person or thing. Thus it is sometimes rendered *face*, as Matth. vi. 16. and many other places; and is applied to the sky or air, Matth. xvi. 3.; *countenance*, Luke, ix. 29.; *presence*, 2 Cor. x. 1.; *fashion*, James, i. 11. The meaning here is the same as in Coloss. iii. 25. The Lord is not moved by the outward



his discourse to them, he declared the person, character, and offices of Jesus, who had been lately crucified, affirming himself to have been an eye-witness of what he related; he asserted his honour and authority as the Lord of all, the sovereign judge of the living and the dead; that he was the Divine Saviour spoken of by the prophets, and that all who believed in his name should receive the remission of sin. Here we see the apostle's doctrine to the Gentiles was the same that he had preached at Jerusalem upon and after the day of Pentecost, and the same with what our Lord had declared concerning himself, "a free" and complete salvation by faith." He did not in the least attempt to accommodate his subject to any supposed prejudices of his new hearers, but faithfully acquitted himself of his message, and left the event to God. The mystery of Christ crucified, which was a stumbling-block to the Jews, was by many of the Gentiles accounted foolishness and absurdity; but the apostles proposed it simply and indifferently to all. In the present case, the success was (what has perhaps seldom happened) universal; the whole company believed, and received the Holy Ghost immediately, previous to baptism, and without the usual imposition of the apostle's hands. This signal attestation, with which the Lord honoured their faith, unanswerably removing every doubt concerning their fitness, Peter immediately directed them to be baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus, through whom they had already received that inward and spiritual

outward distinctions and differences amongst men, to which we often pay regard: (Compare 1 Sam. xvi. 7.). He neither receives or rejects any for being Jew or Gentile, rich or poor, bond or free, male or female, but is rich in mercy to all who call upon him.

grace,



grace, of which baptism was the outward and visible sign.

When this affair was reported in Judea, it was not at first agreeable to those who knew not the warrant and grounds on which Peter had proceeded; so that when he returned to Jerusalem, he found himself under a necessity of vindicating (1) his conduct to the Jewish converts: a full proof that they did not think him infallible, or possessed of that superiority over the whole church, which designing men, for promoting their own ends, have since ascribed to him. But though he was an apostle, and had acted by the express command of God, and though their expostulation seems to have been hasty and rough; yet he did not think it beneath him to give an orderly and circumstantial account of the whole business: they, on the other hand, were open to conviction; and, when they had heard his relation, they instantly acquiesced, and glorified God for his grace given to the Gentiles. This mutual condescension and ingenueness preserved the first Christians in peace, though they were not always exempted from mistakes and wrong impressions.

By this time the believers, who had been dispersed by persecution, had spread the gospel beyond the bounds of Judea and Galilee into Cyprus and Syria, and probably to more distant parts, particularly to Rome, which being the centre and conflux of the empire, would hardly be long unvisited; however, in all places the preaching of the word was confined to the Jews, till Peter's mission to Cornelius afforded an authorised precedent for imparting it to the Heathens.

A. D. 40.]. It was soon after publicly preached in Antioch, the capital of Syria, and no less emi-

\* Acts, xi.



nent for luxury and depravity of manners; yet, amongst these dissolute and enslaved people, the gospel of Christ, accompanied with a divine power, was suddenly and remarkably prevalent to turn a great multitude from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God. The means of this happy change are expressly mentioned: What the philosophers had long attempted in vain, by cold encomiums on the beauty of virtue, was speedily effected by those who simply preached the Lord Jesus, as the author, finisher, and fountain of salvation. When the news of this good beginning was brought to Jerusalem, the apostles sent Barnabas to Antioch; who, being a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost himself, was greatly rejoiced when he saw the numbers and sincerity of the converts, and animated them, by his exhortations, to cleave to the Lord with steady resolution; for he was sensible of what they, perhaps, were little aware of as yet, how many arts the enemy of souls employs to discourage those who are beginning to walk in Wisdom's ways. He afterwards went to Saul, and prevailed on him to leave Tarsus, and join with him in the service of the gospel at Antioch. By the Lord's blessing on the endeavours of these faithful labourers, the church was so greatly increased, that the believers there first received the general denomination of Christians: A significant and instructive appellation, strongly importing their duty and relation to Christ, and to each other; and has therefore universally obtained, and will probably subsist to the end of time. But though this name is accounted honourable with us, and has always been deemed, by those who truly deserve it, the noblest title, *the highest style* of man, it had not the same general estimation when first imposed: in the mouth of unbelievers, whether Jews or Heathens, it was a  
term



term of infamy and reproach, and expressive of the highest contempt \*; and may be therefore ranked among the many opprobrious epithets by which the Lord's faithful followers have been marked out to the rage and scorn of the world.

Caligula having rendered himself universally odious by his inhumanity and caprice, was assassinated in his palace, in the fourth year of his reign (1).

CLAUDIUS, A. D. 41.]. He was succeeded by Claudius; who, soon after his entrance on the government, bestowed the kingdom of Judea on Herod-Agrippa, a grandson of Herod styled *the Great*, (mentioned Matth. ii.), and nephew to Herod the Tetrarch, who put John the Baptist to death. This prince experienced much of that vicissitude which usually attends ambition: he had been detained in prison and chains by Tiberius, greatly favoured and advanced by Caligula, and now seemed to have attained the summit of his wishes; but employing his power to persecute the church, he was suddenly cut off in the height of his prosperity: for who can harden (2) himself against the Lord and prosper! Herod was a professed zealot for the law of Moses and the Jewish institutions, and studied by every means to ingratiate himself with the people. He first expended vast sums in the defence and ornament of the city; but it was in his power to attempt a still more acceptable service, by exerting his authority against the people of Christ: and the motives of vanity and popularity, by which he was governed, prompted him to embrace the occasion. He began by

\* — quos per flagitia invisos vulgus Christianos appellabat: auctor nominis ejus Christus, qui, Tiberio imperante, per procuratorem Pontium Pilatum suppliciiis affectus erat.

Tacitus, Ann. 15.

(1) Josephus's Ant. lib. x.

(2) Acts, xii.

apprehending



apprehending the Apostle James, the son of Zebedee, whom he hastily put to death; and finding that the Jews were highly pleased with this step, he proceeded to imprison Peter, intending to delay his execution till after the passover, [A. D. 44.], that his zeal against these innovators might be applauded by a greater number of spectators. This stroke, though very afflictive to the church, was wisely permitted, to illustrate the courage and fidelity of the apostles: it shewed that their miraculous powers, and high office, afforded them no sure exemption from persecution, but that they ventured and acted upon the same principles of faith and love to Jesus, in common with other believers. Thus James finished his course, and received the crown the first of the apostles. But Peter, being designed for farther services, was still safe, though, to an eye of sense, he seemed marked out for a speedy sacrifice: incessant prayer was made on his behalf by the disciples; and the united prayers of God's people have an efficacy which can be withstood by no human power: when he inclines them to join with earnestness and perseverance in prayer, it is because he has already determined to grant their petition. In this case the answer was signal, though not immediate. The night before Peter was to have been brought forth to suffer, he was sleeping between his keepers with that serenity which is peculiar to those who have a good cause, a good conscience, and a steady faith in God. Neither the inconveniencies of a prison, nor the expectation of death, could discompose him; for he knew in whom he had believed: but he was awakened by an angel, who freed him from his chains, opened the prison-doors, and brought him into the street, unperceived by the guards. After the angel had thus set him at liberty, and was departed, Peter went to the house where his

VOL. III. K friends



friends were at that instant praying for his deliverance. Thus they had a remarkable proof, that the Lord is indeed a God that heareth prayer; and it is recorded for our encouragement.

In the morning Herod found himself disappointed of his prey. The guards, upon examination \*, being unable to give an account of their prisoner, he commanded them to be put to death. It is probable that Herod, or his advisers, might suspect a miraculous interposition, (as the apostles had been delivered the same way a few years before); but to punish the keepers, as if they had been guilty of conniving at his escape, was the most likely method to stop farther inquiry, and prevent the people from supposing any thing extraordinary in the affair.

Herod did not long survive this event. He lived and died a monument of the instability of human greatness. He was much devoted to his Roman masters, and had a taste for their magnificence. This induced him to celebrate games and shews at *Cæsarea*, in honour of the Emperor: here he laboured to display the utmost of his grandeur. His pride was farther flattered by the arrival of an embassy from Tyre and Sidon. These cities had incurred his displeasure; but as they chiefly drew their subsistence from his dominions, they were compelled to supplicate peace; which, though they had highly offended him, they obtained by their interest with Blaſtus his chamberlain. The king appointed a day to receive their submission,

\* Herod examined them himself. It is probable he found strong reason to think Peter had been miraculously delivered; but, like a *wise* politician, he dissembled his conviction; and, to stifle all suspicion, wreaked his resentment upon the soldiers. They, without doubt, believed there was something extraordinary in the case, and might have said so if they had lived;—but dead men tell no tales.

when



when he appeared with a splendor that dazzled the eyes of the spectators: he addressed himself to the ambassadors in a pompous oration, suited, we may suppose, to give them the highest idea both of his power and his clemency. When he had ended, he heard his praises resound from every quarter: the multitude shouted, It is the voice of a god, not of a man. His vain heart was elated with this impious compliment, which indeed was no more than had often been used upon such occasions among the Heathens; but when it was now adopted by those who professed a knowledge of the true God, the proud worm, who durst be pleased with it, was made a sudden and awful example of the divine displeasure: the avenging angel of the Lord smote him with an irresistible, though invisible stroke; and, while surrounded with the fancied insignia of majesty, and in the midst of their idolatrous acclamations, he found and confessed himself a mortal. He was seized with excruciating pains, and expired in a few days, being in a manner devoured by vermin bred from his bowels. With his death the persecution ceased. He perished, and was quickly forgot; but the word of God, which he had attempted to suppress, grew and multiplied as before.

The church of Antioch, during this time, greatly increased, and enjoyed the benefit of many excellent teachers, some of whom were endued with a prophetic spirit, by which the Lord intimated his will to them in particular cases. In this way they had been informed of an approaching dearth; and, as seasons of scarcity would severely affect the disciples in Judea, who laboured under peculiar difficulties, they *cheerfully* contributed to their relief, and sent the collection to Jerusalem by Saul and Barnabas; who having fulfilled their commis-



sion, returned to Antioch about this time (1), [A. D. 45.]. These two were soon afterwards appointed, by an express revelation, to propagate the knowledge of the gospel in other countries: they were set apart to this service by the solemn prayers of the church, and attended by John, fir-named *Mark*, who had accompanied them from Jerusalem. Thus they went forth, like Abraham, uncertain whither they were to go, but assured of an infallible guidance and power to direct and prepare the way.

It is generally believed, that, nearly about the same time, the apostles at Jerusalem likewise separated to preach the gospel in the districts respectively allotted them by the direction of the Holy Spirit; and we have some account from antiquity of their several provinces; according to which they divided among them the greatest part of the known world, from India to Barbary, and from Abyssinia to Scythia. Indeed there is no doubt but they executed their commission as apostles, and spread the gospel far and wide; but the particulars recorded of their labours, sufferings, and circuits, are not transmitted with such authenticity and clearness as to give entire satisfaction. The only *certain* history we have of the apostolic age is that of Luke, which we call the Acts of the Apostles; and this, from the period we are now come to, is confined to those events in which Paul was personally concerned, and does not even carry on his history to the end of his life. The wisdom of God having given us, both in the life of Jesus, and of his first servants, rather a specimen sufficient for our instruction, than a complete history to gratify our curiosity, to this plan we shall conform; and while we have the light of an inspired writer, we shall not

(1) Acts, xiii.



wander after the glimmerings of tradition. I shall therefore, in the progress of this chapter, confine myself to the Evangelist's narration, so far as it goes; and, when he leaves us, it will be sufficient to comprise, in a very narrow compass, the most certain or most probable incidents which we can recover to complete the records of the first century.

Saul and Barnabas embarked at Seleucia, a seaport in the neighbourhood of Antioch, and sailed to Cyprus: they landed at Salamis, on the east side, and proceeded through the island to Paphos, in the west, making the first tender of the gospel in every place to the Jews. At Paphos the Roman governor, Sergius Paulus, was desirous to hear the apostles doctrine: He was attended by Elymas, a pretended magician and prophet, who, fearing the discovery of his impostures, laboured to divert the governor from his purpose, and to prejudice him against them. But Saul sharply rebuked his wickedness, and, by the impulse of the Holy Spirit \*, denounced a sentence against him, suitable to his crime: he who endeavoured to detain others in darkness and ignorance, was suddenly struck blind himself. This punishment, which he could neither foresee nor avoid, discovered the vanity of his claims, and convinced the governor, that the preachers spoke by an authority superior

\* It is expressly said, Saul, or Paul, was filled with the Holy Ghost; therefore the severe expressions in his reprimand were not the effects of intemperate anger, but a solemn declaration of the sorcerer's true character: yet it is safer to imitate the apostle in his patience and humility, than in this singular instance. The power of God, which accompanied his words, proved by what impulse and authority he spoke. We who are not apostles, and who make no claim to apostolic power, shall act more in character to conform to the general rule St Paul has given us, 2. Tim. ii. 24, 25.



to their own; he therefore attended more carefully to their words, and became soon a partaker of their faith.

From Cyprus they sailed to Perga, in Pamphilia; where their attendant Mark, either already wearied with fatigue, or apprehensive of greater difficulties, or from a fickleness and levity of temper, would proceed no farther with them, but returned to Jerusalem. By this indiscretion he not only lost many valuable opportunities, which he afterwards regretted, but in the end gave occasion to a great difference between Barnabas and Paul. Such is the state of humanity, that those persons in a society who cannot do much good, are often, by their imprudence, the cause of much harm, even where they intend otherwise. From Perga they proceeded to Antioch in Pisidia, and entered into the synagogue. [A. D. 46.] Their habit and manners bespoke them Jews, but perhaps the rulers of the synagogue were not apprised of their character. When the ordinary service was finished, they were desired to propound their sentiments. Paul, who was usually the speaker, addressed them in a long discourse, a valuable abstract of which is preserved to us. In his introduction, he reminded them of their ancient history and prophecies; but the sum and substance of his sermon was Jesus. He proved from the scripture, that *he* was the Messiah, in whom the promises centered, and proposed him to all as the great object of faith, through whom, and by whom alone, forgiveness of sin was to be obtained, and a free justification from those offences for which the law of Moses had made no provision. In the close, he solemnly warned them of the danger of rejecting this Saviour and his gospel. His discourse made no great impression upon the Jews; but some of the Heathens, who had been occasionally present, desired to hear the mat-  
ter



ter farther explained : Accordingly, on the next Sabbath, almost the whole city was collected to hear the gospel, which exceedingly offended the Jews, and prompted them to interpose with cavil and abuse. The Apostles then told them, in plain terms, that, though their message was first to them, yet, since they refused to receive it, they would henceforth freely proclaim it to the Heathens, from whom they expected a more favourable hearing; nor were they disappointed in their hope, for many of the latter received the word with joy, both in the city and adjacent country \*. The Jews, farther exasperated by this success, so wrought upon the passions and prejudices of some persons of influence, both men and women, who were probably proselytes, and superstitiously devoted to their new profession, that Paul and Barnabas were violently compelled to depart; but they left behind them disciples, the fruits of their ministry, who were filled with joy and the Holy Spirit, and thereby enabled to maintain the faith, though their teachers were forced from them.

The apostles, shaking off the dust of their feet, (as our Lord had commanded), for a testimony against the obstinate infidelity of the Jews, went from thence to Iconium, the chief city of Lycaonia, where they made many converts, both Jews and Gentiles. But the Jews who believed not, actuated by the same spirit in every place, opposed them earnestly †; yet they staid so long, and met with

\* When the Jews saw the *multitudes*, they were filled with envy. Among the clamours raised against persons and doctrines in our own time, some have not been ashamed to alledge the great concourse of people usually attending, as a sufficient objection, forgetting (as it should seem) that this was one circumstance that provoked and instigated the enemies of Christianity from the beginning, John vii. 40. 48. and xi. 48. and xii. 19.

† Acts, xiv. 2. "The Jews stirred up the people." There is



with such success, that the city was divided, a part holding with them, and a part influenced by their enemies, who from thence took occasion to represent them to the magistrates as disturbers of the public peace : a charge which has often been falsely urged against the ministers of the gospel. At length their adversaries prevailed, and violent measures were resolved on ; but they, having notice of it, withdrew in time to Lystra, in the same province, where they pursued their ministry with their usual zeal and firmness, without being deterred by the opposition they had already met with, or were likely to meet in every place. Among their hearers at Lystra, there was one who had been a cripple from his birth. Paul, observing his attention, and some indications of faith in his behaviour, was directed to confirm the doctrine of Jesus by a signal miracle. He commanded the lame man to stand upright upon his feet : and his word was accompanied with immediate power ; the man, who had never walked, instantly sprang up, and possessed the perfect use of his limbs. It appeared from this instance, that though miracles have a tendency to rouse the attention, and are a proof of a power beyond the ordinary course of things, yet they cannot, of themselves, inform or convince the mind of truth ; for the ignorant multitude, though greatly struck with what they saw, were so far from believing the Apostle's doctrine, on the evidence of this miracle, that they endeavoured to account for it on their own idolatrous principles : they forgot all they had heard of Je-

a natural enmity in the hearts of some men, but in many it is dormant ; they are engaged in business and pleasure, and would be content to let the people of God alone, as unworthy their notice : these must be *stirred up* by the more zealous to join in the common cause ; and accordingly no pains or misrepresentations are spared to rouse them from their indolence.

fus,



fus, and cried out, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. Agreeable to their blinded notions, they called Barnabas, *Jupiter*, and Paul, *Mercury*; imagining something in them peculiarly characteristic of those fabulous deities. In the warmth of their superstition, they assembled with their high-priest \* and victims, and would have offered sacrifices to the men who came to turn them from dumb idols to serve the living God. But nothing gives the faithful ministers of Christ greater pain, than to have any part of that honour or dependence addressed to themselves, which they are desirous wholly to engage for their Lord and Master. Paul and Barnabas, who had suffered persecution and ill treatment with patience, were transported beyond their usual bounds at these marks of ignorant applause; they rushed in among the people, confessed their own infirmities, boldly reprov'd their blind idolatry, and directed them where alone their thanks and worship were due; yet, with all they could say, they hardly prevailed on them to desist. It was happy for them that they sought not their own glory, and could not be elated with the applause of men. Poor and precarious is the reward of those who aim no higher than this; for, as the tide, after running violently one way, soon and suddenly reverts to the contrary extreme, so inconstant is the praise and regard of the unthinking many, who are governed by appearances, and susceptible of every

\* The high-priest was probably willing to avail himself of the superstition of the people, and thought it a favourable occasion to establish the belief of a peculiar sanctity and virtue in the temple at Lystra, which might increase the number of votaries, and promote his own wealth and influence; just as a legendary report of the appearance or miracles of some saint, or angel, has been improved to procure a veneration for particular cities or temples in Christian countries.



new impression. Some of the restless Jews followed the apostles from Iconium, and, by their insinuations, prevailed on the same people to treat those as malefactors, whom a little before they had revered as deities: they tumultuously assaulted Paul, (who, being the chief speaker, was usually the chief sufferer), stoned him, and dragged him out of the city, supposing they had killed him; but the Lord, to whom the issues of life and death belong, restored him, and healed his bruises, so that he rose up while the disciples were sorrowfully standing round him, and having entered into the city, to shew that he was neither dead nor intimidated, he was enabled to accompany Barnabas the next day to Derbe.

Here they continued some time, and taught many; and this was the boundary of their present progress. From hence they returned, regardless of their enemies, to the places they had been at before, to Lystra, Iconium, Antioch, and Perga, confirming the believers, forming them into societies, and constituting elders and pastors, from amongst themselves, in every church. In all places they took care to instruct the believers in the nature of their profession; and reminded them of an unalterable necessity, in the present constitution of things, that through much tribulation \* we must enter

\* Acts, xiv. 22. That this was the case in the primitive times is generally allowed; but we have been told by some, that things are now greatly altered in this respect: they would persuade us that our Lord's words (Math. vii. 13) are no longer in force; that the way to the kingdom, in our happy days, is broad, spacious, smooth, and thronged by multitudes, the very characters he has given us of the road to destruction. Such teachers and writers are little aware how they proclaim their own ignorance. If they knew the spirit of enmity which the world bears to true Christianity,—the trials with which the Lord visits his people, to prove and exercise their faith,—the assaults and temptations they endure from the powers of darkness,—the griefs they feel from a  
sense



enter into the kingdom of God. After this, recommending the new converts to the grace and care of the Lord, in whom they had believed, they again took shipping, and returned to Antioch in Syria. Upon their arrival they assembled the whole church, and gave them a particular account of all that the Lord had done *for* them, and *by* them, in their late circuit. [A. D. 47.] This is the news which believers delight to relate and hear: the traverses of policy, or the events of war, the usual topics of conversation, afford them but little entertainment; but it rejoices their hearts to be informed of new accessions to the Redeemer's kingdom, and to see how his wisdom and grace triumph over all opposition.

Hitherto the church had only to struggle with outward difficulties; but as human nature is always the same, and the apostolical times were to transmit instruction to the people of God in every succeeding period, mistakes, disputes, and divisions were, by degrees, permitted to take place among professed believers. If it had not been so, we might not only have been discouraged by the great disparity between the first Christians and those who have lived since, but, for want of rules and precedents of sufficient authority, we should have been continually at a loss how to oppose and confute the various errors which have appeared and been revived during so many centuries: the Divine Wisdom therefore thought fit to suffer every false and dangerous notion, whereby the enemy of souls would at any time attempt to corrupt the simplicity of the

sense of their own unfaithfulness and unfruitfulness,—the fightings without, and fears within, which are more or less experienced in the Christian life,—if they knew these things, they would speak otherwise. The beaten way to honours and preferments is, perhaps, free from these tribulations; but not so the way that will lead to the kingdom of God.

faith,



faith, to make its first entrance while the apostles were yet living, that we might have their instructions and examples to guide us in every emergency. However paradoxical it may seem, we hope in a proper place to shew, that no new opinion, either right or wrong, respecting the faith in Christ, has been started since the close of the scriptural canon. As the gospel, that good and perfect gift, came down from the Father of Light *complete*, and has received no amendment from the hands through which it has successively passed,—so, on the other hand, the grand deceiver exerted *all* his force against it, and availed himself of *all* his influence on the ignorance and wickedness of men from the very beginning, and has no subtle devices in reserve now, having tried his utmost resources over and over. It is true, length of time, and change of circumstances, have afforded him opportunities of placing his delusions in various lights, and have given some of his schemes a seeming strength and establishment which they had not at first; but as a man attained to his full stature and vigour, is the same individual person that was once an infant, unable to stand alone, so there neither is, nor has been, any erroneous principle, however authorised or recommended, or perhaps applauded, as a new discovery, by those who are ignorant of scripture and antiquity, but we can, from express passages in the apostles writings, shew that the same existed in their time, though in a more feeble and infantile state. This point we are to illustrate more at large hereafter; at present I am only concerned to take notice of a dissention that arose among the believers at Antioch, not long after the return of Saul and Barnabas, which made their presence there particularly useful. This was occasioned by some Judaising professors, who came down from Judea, and taught the Gentile converts, that except they  
were



were circumcised, and kept the law of Moses, they could not be saved. This dangerous position, arising from a misapprehension of the righteousness of Christ, as the only ground of a sinner's acceptance with God, and tending to substitute a quicksand for the foundation of hope, instead of the immoveable rock which God has laid in Zion, was warmly opposed by these apostles of the Gentiles; they had a double conviction of its falsehood, both from the nature of the faith they had received themselves, and the effects of the gospel they had imparted to others; but many weaker minds, having less experience of the work of grace in their own hearts, and less acquaintance with what the Lord had wrought in others, were staggered. When, therefore, after many debates, the point was not settled to satisfaction, it was resolved to depute Paul and Barnabas to consult the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. [A. D. 49.] If this, as seems probable, was the journey St Paul refers to, Gal. ii. they were directed to take this step by the Spirit of God, since he there says, that he went up to Jerusalem by, or in consequence of, a revelation. They were accompanied by some brethren; and in every place where they found believers, they comforted them with the account of their late progress. At Jerusalem they were cordially received; and having declared the happy fruits of their preaching to the Heathens, though they had not attempted to bind them to the Mosaic law, they proceeded to declare the tenet which had been lately advanced, and their motives for opposing it. They soon found persons of the same legal spirit, who justified and repeated the obligation of the ceremonial law upon all who embraced the gospel. Upon this, a particular day was named for the whole assembly to meet, and discuss the question. In this convention there was the highest room to expect, that the Spirit of God



would influence their resolves, and guard them from giving their sanction to an error; and he did so; yet not by an audible voice or instantaneous impulse, but by presiding over their debates, and enabling them, in the conclusion, to collect and pronounce the true state of the question with infallible evidence and certainty. Here again it is plain, that Peter little thought himself intitled to that supreme prerogative, as the immediate vicar of Jesus Christ, which his pretended successors falsely ascribe to him; nor did his brethren remind him of his privilege, otherwise there could have been no debate, for his declaration would have been decisive; but waving the claim of authority, he argued the insignificance of the Jewish rites as to salvation, from the Lord's conduct towards Cornelius and his friends, by his ministry. These were the first Gentile converts; and in this instance, he said, the Lord had fully declared his mind, making no difference between Jew and Gentile, purifying their hearts by faith in his blood, and imparting to them those substantial blessings, of which the ceremonial law exhibited no more than the shadow; and which, in comparison of the liberty of the gospel, he termed *an unnecessary yoke, too heavy to be borne*. The assembly then kept silence, while Paul and Barnabas related more at large the fruits of their late mission among the Heathens. The conference was closed, and the determination given, not by Peter, but by James, who asserted the Gentiles freedom from the Jewish yoke, and enjoined them only to abstain from fornication, from things offered to idols, and from blood. The two latter points were necessary to preserve a friendly intercourse between the Gentile and Jewish converts, so long as these were indulged in observing the Levitical institutions; and the prohibition from fornication, though immediately belonging to the moral law,



law, which was of universal obligation, was added to give the Gentiles a deeper sense of the guilt and evil of a practice, which the most civilized and virtuous Heathens considered as almost, if not wholly innocent.

This sentence was generally embraced; and a letter to the same effect was written to the believers at Antioch, confirming them in their Christian liberty. In this they thought it a sufficient condemnation of the opposite opinion to say, They had given no such commandment: a protestation the apostles might have often repeated, had they lived to this day; but since their genuine writings still subsist, we may, by parity of reason, still infer, that we need not be afraid of rejecting any thing that is enjoined as binding upon the conscience, if we can be sure that the apostles, who were divinely inspired to explain the Christian faith and practice, have given us no precept in its favour. They likewise took care to assert their firm persuasion, that their decision was agreeable to the dictates of the Holy Spirit. This convocation has generally been styled *the first Christian council*; but indeed, when we compare it with those which bore the same name afterwards; and were professedly formed upon this precedent, we shall be almost tempted to say, It was not only the *first*, but the *last*. Here were no intrigues practised, no temporal interests consulted, no fierce and bloody anathemas issued to give a sanction to persecution, no uncertainty or animosity in the issue; but the affair was conducted with freedom and moderation, and the conclusion made by general consent, and to the satisfaction of both parties. How different in these respects from the spirit of after times. But though this answered the end in the present case, the judgement of the apostles was not entirely obeyed, even while they lived. This debate was revived in other places, and pro-



ved a frequent impediment to the peace of the church, so long at least as the temple and worship of Jerusalem continued, and gave St Paul occasion to write his epistle to the Galatians expressly on this subject; nay, it seems the mistake still subsisted in Judea, though none publicly ventured to contradict the decree when it was made; for when, some time after, Peter went to Antioch, and conversed (1) freely with the Gentile converts, living after their manner for a season, yet, when some brethren came down from Jerusalem, he was so fearful to offend them in this matter, that he separated himself again, and, by his influence, prevailed on Barnabas likewise to dissemble in favour of those of the circumcision. For this weak compliance, whereby he seemed to overthrow what he had before established, St Paul withstood him to his face: he did not detract from his character by insinuations to his prejudice behind his back, nor did he content himself with reproving him in secret; but as the offence was public, tending to confirm the Jews in their bigotry, and to offend the weak on both sides, he boldly and publicly rebuked him before them all. Strange weakness incident to the best of men, that Peter, who had first laid aside his prejudices, who had visited the Gentiles by divine direction, had seen the happy effects of his compliance, and vindicated his own conduct so unanswerably upon a late occasion, should now shrink and trifle, expose himself, and grieve his brethren, through fear of those who came from Jerusalem: To be delivered from the fear of man, is a deliverance indeed! It was happy for Peter that he had, in his brother Paul, a faithful friend, who, by a few well-timed words, broke the chain, and set him at liberty. It is surprising that any who

(1) Gal. ii. 11,

have



have read this passage should dream of fixing on Peter, above any other of the apostles, to be the supreme and infallible head of the Christian church.

Justus and Silas, two of the brethren, were sent with Barnabas and Paul to accompany the letter, and to declare the purport of it more at large. They were gladly received at Antioch, and not only confirmed the peace of the church, but were farther helpful to their faith, by the singular gifts with which the Lord had honoured them. In a little time Justus returned to Jerusalem, but Silas chose to continue longer, and was afterwards the constant companion of St Paul in his travels.

A. D. 50.] This obstacle being removed, the gospel flourished greatly at Antioch. But, amidst all their services and success there, Paul and Barnabas could not forget the converts they had left in Cyprus and Asia Minor. They proposed, therefore, to make them a second visit, to comfort them, and to see how the work had prospered in their absence: but a difficulty was started concerning John, surnamed *Mark*, who had formerly left them at Perga; and having probably repented of his irresolution, was now desirous to proceed with them again. Paul warmly opposed this, thinking him highly culpable for his inconstancy, and perhaps too much influenced against him by a spirit of resentment not wholly excusable. On the other hand, Barnabas undertook his apology; in which, besides his tenderness to his fault, he seems to have been moved by considerations which ought to have no place where the service of God is concerned. John was his sister's son; and this led him to consider his conduct in the most favourable light. Thus they were both a little partial in the cause; but much more wrong in the issue; for the contention became so sharp between them, that it broke their harmony. They determined to part.

L. 3

Accordingly,



Accordingly Barnabas took Mark, whose company he had dearly purchased by the loss of Paul's, and sailed to Cyprus, his native place; and Paul, chusing Silas in his room, went through Syria and Cilicia, being recommended to the Lord by the prayers of the brethren. So that their former work was now divided between them.

I must venture to digress here a little for the sake of two remarks, of which the course of our history may often remind the reader. 1. How small an occasion will discover human infirmity even in the brightest characters! Not all the graces of Paul and Barnabas, nor the remembrance of the services and difficulties they had jointly experienced, nor the importance of the common cause in which they were engaged, nor the fear of giving offence to the world and to the church, could restrain these dear friends, fellow-labourers and fellow-sufferers, from contending and separating about a trifle. 2. How wise is the over-ruling providence of God, permitting such things for the trial of some, the instruction of others, and the better carrying on his own designs! In succeeding revivals of religion, the like differences \* have sometimes taken place among the main instruments, and from as trivial causes: and though they have not obtained without fault in some, and inconvenience to many; yet the event has proved them no hindrance upon the whole. The work has become more diffusive, and more incontestible, when persons of different tempers, sentiments, and talents, who seemed to su-

\* To mention only one by anticipation,—the unhappy dispute between Luther and Zuinglius, and their respective followers, concerning the words, "This is my body." The difference between them was little more than imaginary; but the mischiefs it occasioned were real, important, and numerous, and would probably have stifled the Reformation in its birth, if it had not been so remarkably under an almighty protection.

perfidial



perſſial obſervers as the heads of different parties, have laboured with equal zeal and ſucceſs in advancing the one great deſign of the goſpel. As a ſkilful gardener raiſes many plants in a little ſpot of ground, and removes them afterwards to places where they will have more room to grow and flouriſh; ſo they who are deſigned for extenſive uſefulneſs, are often firſt reared within a little compaſs, within the ſight and knowledge of each other, where they are ſheltered and ſtrengthened, while tender, by their mutual advices, prayers, and examples, and ſeem to have only one heart and one mind. But were they always to continue thus cloſely connected, no one would have room to expand according to the meaſure of gifts and ſervices which the Lord has appointed them; therefore they are thinned and tranſplanted: either perſecutions from without, or weakneſſes, miſtakes, or jealousies among themſelves, ſcatter them aſar, to places and undertakings they had no thoughts of, and which would not have been otherwiſe attempted.

The Apoſtle Paul, with his companion Silas (1), proceeded, as has been mentioned, through Syria and Cilicia, to the parts he had formerly viſited. When he came to Lyſtra, he choſe Timothy for his aſſociate and companion in his journey, who it is probable had been converted by his miniſtry, and a witneſs to his ſufferings for the goſpel when he was there before. Timothy was of Jewiſh extract by the mother's ſide, and carefully educated from his infancy in the knowledge of the ſcriptures; but his father was a Greek. This circumſtance being generally known to the Jews, and likely to render him leſs acceptable among them, Paul, to obviate their prejudices, directed him to be cir-

(1) Acts, xvi.

cumciſed;



circumcised; thus shewing his readiness to become all things to all men, so far as was consistent with a good conscience, and conducive to edification: for though, when the observance of the Mosaic law was insisted on as necessary to salvation, he steadily opposed it, and would not admit the least addition to the doctrine of free justification by the blood of Christ, he was willing to permit it to the Jewish converts in their present situation, and to accommodate himself to their weakness, for their advantage. He had before withstood the circumcision of Titus, who was a Gentile, when it was urged as a necessary point; but now that debate was settled in favour of gospel-liberty: he proposed the circumcision of Timothy himself. The seeming inconsistency of his conduct vanishes, if the difference of the two cases is rightly understood; but those who act from the most enlarged principles, who know when and in what points resolution is necessary, and when and how far it is expedient to yield to others, will always be thought inconstant and inconsistent by the zealots of parties. In the course of his progress, he delivered, in every city, the decree lately determined at Jerusalem, which, though primarily directed to Antioch, was of equal force, as a rule and bond of peace, in all places where there were both Jewish and Gentile converts. Thus, having watered his former planting, he proceeded to preach in Phrygia and Galatia. The route of the gospel was directed by the Spirit of God, who restrained the apostle from entering the province which is called, by way of distinction, the *Proconsular Asia*, of which Ephesus was the capital; not that this country was to be excluded from the knowledge of Christ; for St Paul preached in many (1) parts of it afterwards with great success; but the proper

(1) See Acts, xix. 10.



season was not yet come, the Lord having an important service for them first in another place. For the same reason, and by the same influence, they were prevented going into Bythinia, which they had some thoughts of attempting. Thus, in a manner undetermined where they were to labour, they came to Troas, a sea port in the Archipelago; and when their journey was now bounded by the sea, they received a farther intimation of the Lord's will, and found that he had been leading them in the right way; for they were brought to a port proper for imbarcking to the place where the Lord had designed to send them.

A. D. 51.] Here St Paul had a vision by night, of a man standing by him, whose garb and expression intimated his country, and intreating him, saying, "Come over into Macedonia, and help us." This vision was attended with such circumstances as left no room to doubt either its origin or meaning: so that, when he had communicated it to his companions, they assuredly collected, that the Lord called them into Macedonia. Accordingly they took shipping; and having a favourable wind, they soon arrived at Neapolis; from whence they proceeded by land to Philippi, a place of note, and a Roman colony. Their preaching and continuance in this city, which in time became the seat of a flourishing church, was productive of several interesting and important events.

On the Sabbath day they went out of the city to a place by the river-side, (a usual resort of the Jews for the exercise of public prayer), where, meeting with some women, as it should seem, before the rest were assembled, they spake freely of the great subject, which was always uppermost in their hearts and mouths. One of them, named *Lydia*, a native of Thyatira, and then resident at Philippi, gave a peculiar attention to St Paul's discourse:



course : the reason is assigned, the Lord opened her heart. The rest heard the same words ; but the hearts of all are dull, contracted, and averse to spiritual truths : so that, without a divine interposition, the most powerful speakers speak in vain. Lydia heard to good purpose : she believed, and was immediately baptized, with her family, and gladly received the messengers of gospel-grace into her house.

Continuing to preach in this place so long as they remained at Philippi, they were often met by a young woman under the influence of an evil spirit, who, as they passed by, cried after them, These men are the servants of the most high God, who declare unto us the way of salvation, in like manner as the demoniacs had sometimes confessed our Saviour's authority and mission. It may seem strange, that an evil spirit should testify in favour of the preachers of the gospel ; but perhaps it was either to make them suspected of a confederacy, or to draw them into a snare. However, when this had been often repeated, St Paul, who could not bear to be spoken well of by a spirit which was not of God, commanded him, in the name of Jesus, to quit his possession. The spirit, compelled to obey, left the woman instantly. But this opened a way to give them disturbance in another manner : Her masters, to whom she had formerly brought great profit by her divining talent, finding she was no longer willing or able to procure them advantage by that means, apprehended Paul and Silas, as the chief instruments of their loss, and brought them before the magistrates, with the heavy charge, (which is usually revived when the preaching of the gospel interferes with the views of interest), that they exceedingly disturbed the peace of the city, by attempting innovations contrary to the established religion : they styled them



them *Jews* to the Romans, on account of their open abhorrence of idol-worship, which was carefully supported by the Roman laws and customs. The unthinking multitude soon joined in the alarm; and the magistrates, easily prejudiced by the terms of the accusation, instead of acting as impartial judges, declared themselves parties in the affair. Without examining into particulars, they violently tore off the cloaths of Paul and Silas; and having caused them to be beat with many stripes, they cast them into prison, giving the jailor a particular charge to keep them safely. This command was executed with severity. He thrust them into the inner prison, and fastened their feet in the stocks. But no walls or dungeons can exclude those comforts of God's Spirit which are promised to those who suffer for righteousness sake, and which are able to overpower the sense of every inconvenience. Paul and Silas were so little discomposed by this cruel treatment, that they joyfully sung hymns of praise to God, and were heard by the other prisoners, who probably were surpris'd at the cheerfulness they expressed in such circumstances. But they were surpris'd much more at the testimony the Lord immediately gave in behalf of his servants: for while they were thus engaged, on a sudden the earth trembled; the very foundations of the prison were shaken; so that all the doors flew open, and every one's fetters and bonds were instantly loos'd. The noise awakened the jailor; who, supposing the prisoners were all escap'd, and dreading the consequences, in the first transports of his terror, drew his sword to slay himself; for so the false wisdom of the Heathens, ignorant of the awful realities beyond the grave, taught men to avoid the pressure of present troubles, by desperately plunging themselves into an unknown eternity. But St Paul, though in another part of  
the



the prison, and in the dark, was made acquainted with his purpose, and called out to him with a loud voice, Do thyself no harm; we are all here! It increased his surprise to find that his design was made known to them, and that those whom he had treated so hardly should forget all their wrongs, and interest themselves in his preservation. Such an instance of forgiveness and tenderness to an enemy deeply affected him, and convinced him of the wrong he had done them, more forcibly than the sharpest expostulations could have done. This is indeed the peculiar triumph of a Christian, to overcome evil with good. He immediately called for lights, and, in agony of guilt and terror, sprung in, and cast himself at the feet of those over whom he had so lately tyrannized. After this expression of his respect, and compunction for the injury he had done them, he brought them out, and addressed them with that question, of the last importance to every awakened soul, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved?" Paul and Silas, who had but one answer to this question, suited to every rank of life, and to sinners of every degree, directed him to faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, as the only and infallible means of salvation. This faith the Lord was pleased to give; so that, when he had brought them to his house, and heard them explain the doctrine more at large, he believed, and was baptized, with all his family. Upon this his sorrow was turned into permanent joy; and now it appeared why the Lord had permitted his servants to be thus rudely handled. Amongst other reasons, it was on the account of this jailor, who would otherwise have remained a stranger to the gospel, if the Lord, in the unsearchable riches of his mercy, had not thus sent it to him, and, by the concurrent dispensations of his providence, disposed him to receive it with thankfulness, as life  
from



from the dead. It likewise proved the vanity of all attempts to suppress the truth. The magistrates and people abused the preachers, and put them in prison : but the effect was quite contrary to their intentions ; for by this means the jailor, the instrument of their cruelty, with his household, were converted ; and thus the apostle's enemies, through the over-ruling hand of God, became subservient to his design, and helped him to some of the first members of his new church.

The jailor, thus made partaker of the faith, expressed his gratitude to his prisoners : he washed their stripes, and set meat before them, and was soon freed from any suspense on their account ; for in the morning the magistrate sent him orders to dismiss them from confinement. But St Paul was willing to let them know that they had failed in their duty, and acted against those very laws and customs, of which, as Romans, they professed to be so tenacious. A citizen of Rome was not liable to bonds or scourging, and a subject of Rome, tho' not a citizen, could not be legally punished till he had been permitted to answer his accusers face to face, Acts, xxv. 16. The apostle was injured in both these respects ; they had punished him without trial, and they had bound and beat him, tho' he was a Roman : he therefore asserted his privilege. He might have insisted on satisfaction ; but he was a Christian, a willing disciple of a suffering Saviour : he had been once a persecutor himself, and had obtained forgiveness ; therefore he found it easy to forgive. His remonstrance made the magistrates willing to submit to his terms ; they came themselves, and honourably dismissed their prisoners, intreating them, that, to prevent farther inconveniencies, they would withdraw from the city ; which they did, after they had taken leave of Lydia and the other disciples.



A. D. 52.] From hence, passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, the residence of the Roman Governor. Here Paul, according to his usual custom, applying himself first to the Jews, discoursed and *reasoned* with them in their synagogue three successive Sabbaths, out of their own scriptures, opening \* the true sense of the prophecies concerning the Messiah, and then shewing their accomplishment in the person of Jesus. His labour was not wholly in vain; some of them believed, and became disciples; but the rest, and the greater part, discovered the indignation and enmity of their hearts against the truth. Under such leaders, the unthinking rabble are easily instigated to do mischief; so that they found no difficulty to raise a tumultuous mob, who assaulted the house of Jason, where Paul and Silas resided; but not finding them there, they forced away Jason, and some of the new believers, before the magistrates. The accusation was, that the preachers of the gospel, who, from the effect of their doctrine in disturbing the false peace of sin, began to be sufficiently described, when spoken of as men † who turned the world upside down, and threw

\* Acts, xvii. 3.; opening and alledging; first explaining the true sense of the passage, and then laying down plain and undeniable deductions from it, applicable to the case in hand. Thus much is implied in the Greek words, *διαλογίζων και παρατίθεμενος*. A proper model for preachers and writers in divinity. How many controversies would cease, how much time would be redeemed, how many offences would be avoided, if it was universally followed, if the scriptures were explained in their true sense and connection, and nothing advanced but what could be fairly deduced from such an explanation.

† It is still thought a sufficient and unanswerable objection against the preaching of the gospel, to say, These opinions cause divisions and separations, and break the peace of families and communities. We may bring the point to a short issue: Did our Lord foretell this as one sure and perpetual consequence that would attend



threw all into confusion where-ever they appeared, were come thither also; that Jason had received and countenanced them; and that their fundamental tenets were inconsistent with obedience to government, since they professed and inculcated subjection to one Jesus, whom they styled their King. By such misrepresentations, the enemies of the gospel-doctrine have often aimed to render it obnoxious to the civil powers. The rulers were alarmed at this accusation; but being unwilling to proceed to extremities, though obliged to take some notice of what seemed to affect the interest of Cæsar, they took sufficient security of Jason and the rest for their good behaviour, and dismissed them without farther trouble. In the mean time Paul and Silas, against whom the violence had been chiefly intended, were sent safely away by the brethren to Berea, where, regardless of their past dangers and sufferings, they pursued their endeavours to recommend the gospel to the Jews; and in this place they met with a friendly reception. It is said the Bereans were more noble than those of Thessalonica; for to be open to conviction and information is the mark of a noble mind: they were of a more free and ingenuous temper, not slaves to the fear of man, or the power of prejudice: they heard with candour, and examined the scriptures themselves to find the truth. The gospel of Christ is suited to give the fullest satisfaction to inquirers of this spirit. Accordingly many of them believed. But when the Jews of Thessalonica were informed of this, they followed Paul thither, with

attend the prevalence of his gospel, or did he not? If he did not, what is the meaning of Matth. xii. 34 — 36? If he did, then by what name are we to call that manner of preaching which has either no tendency, or no power, to disturb the false and dangerous peace of a wicked world.



a view to repeat the part they had acted in their own city : but they came too late : Paul had already planted the gospel ; and, leaving Silas and Timothy, who were less obnoxious, to remain a little longer with the brethren, he was conducted first towards the sea, to elude the attempts of his enemies, and afterwards to Athens, a city which, for its eminence in literature and all the polite arts, was styled, by general consent, *The seat of the Muses*.

While the apostle waited at Athens for the arrival of Silas and Timothy, his spirit was inflamed with a lively concern for the honour of God, and the welfare of souls : it grieved him to see a city, so famed for refinement and philosophy, wholly given to idolatry, and, with respect to the most important concerns of life, quite upon a level with the most ignorant barbarians. St Paul is generally allowed, by those who will allow him little else, to have been a man of taste and letters. He was now at Athens, the school of philosophy, and center of the fine arts : painting, statuary, architecture, and elegance, appeared in every quarter : but the affecting observation he had made of the state of the inhabitants, so filled his mind, that he could take little notice of any thing else. To those who understand the nearness and importance of an eternal state, the highest improvements of unsanctified reason afford little more entertainment than the trivial sports of children, or the more wretched amusements of lunatics. He was so struck with the ignorance, superstition, and wickedness of the *people*, that he could relish none of the beauties of the place, but, full of a different emotion, compassionately laboured to inspire them with true wisdom. He was soon encountered by the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers, the respectable advocates for those principles of pleasure and pride, to one or  
the



the other of which all men are enslaved till the gospel sets them free. Here, in some measure accommodating himself to the prevailing taste, he reasoned with the reasoners, and silenced the wise men of the world, in their own way, by dint of argument: but the contest was unequal; their syllogisms soon failed them; and they were forced to retreat to their last refuge, an affected wit and railery. Unable to answer the force of his discourses, they triumphed without a victory, and expressed their contempt of him and his doctrine by a word of the lowest and most despicable signification, which our version not improperly renders, *a babler*; but perhaps no term in our language can sufficiently express the poignancy of the original. Others so entirely mistook the state of the question, that they thought he was a publisher or setter forth of strange gods; they thought that Jesus and the Resurrection were deities they had not before heard of; and his discourse always turning upon these topics, they concluded, indeed with reason, that his only business and desire was to proclaim to all the divinity whom he worshipped. And it is no wonder that, from a half-attention to his words, they should be induced to personify the Resurrection as a deity, since the Heathens had altars erected, not only to Honour, Virtue, and Liberty, but to the vices and disorders of human nature, such as Fear, Shame, Famine, and Fevers.

This weak mistake gave occasion to summon him before the council, who bore the name of *Arcopagus*, or the *Hill of Mars*, from the place where they met, an assembly in high estimation for authority and wisdom, and whose particular office it was to superintend the public religion, and preserve it from innovation. It does not appear, however, that he underwent a formal trial before them. His opponents seemed rather disposed to gratify their cu-



riosity than their malice: their politeness perhaps made them something averse to the severer forms of persecution, and content with the less invidious, though to many not less formidable, methods of scorn and ridicule. Their prevailing passion was the love of novelty; they spent their time in telling or hearing some new, or, as the Greek expresses it, some newer thing. The expected news lost its relish the moment it was known; and they were always in search of something *newer still*; therefore the gospel, though the strongest, as well as the most important news they had ever met with, could not engage such volatile minds: while it was the newer thing, the freshest news, they were content to listen; but as soon as they were satisfied what it was, they wanted to hear something else. The apostle no where met with so little success as amongst this polite, learned, ignorant people; and wherever this Athenian spirit prevails, it retards the success of the gospel more than all the arts and violence of persecution.

The discourse of the apostle on this occasion is equally a standard of fine address and of just reasoning. He had observed their religious rites and worship with attention, and had selected from among their numerous altars, the one which was most fit for his purpose. The beauty of his exordium is obscured by the expression, *too superstitious*, in our version; the Greek word to which it answers is ambiguous, and suited to bespeak a favourable hearing, rather than importing an abrupt reproof; *q. d.* "I perceive, indeed, Athenians, that you are observant of the invisible powers in an unusual manner; for, besides the variety of temples and altars which you have in common with other cities of Greece, I observed one with a peculiar inscription, To THE UNKNOWN GOD. This God, as yet unknown to you,



you, is he whom I serve, and the new doctrine, of which you ask me, relates to his will and worship." This was the most happy and pertinent medium to enlarge from that could be imagined; the Athenians, always eager to hear some newer thing, expected an account of new deities, but Paul referred them to an altar and inscription among themselves, which, merely by being obvious, had escaped their reflection. It is to be feared that this observation and inscription may suit the devotions of many who think themselves Christians. The same address is visible in his whole argument. To the Jews he quoted the books of the holy scripture; but with these Heathens he appealed to the volume of creation, and argued, from the impresses of power, wisdom, and goodness every where displayed before their eyes, the excellence and independence of their great author, how little he stood in need of men, and how unworthy of his divine majesty all their laborious inventions were, while they thought to honour him by worshipping the works of their own hands: He asserted the providence and omnipresence of God, that he was the fountain of life and all its comforts, the supreme disposer of all events, and the common father of mankind, confirming this part of his doctrine by a quotation from Aratus, one of their own poets. He afterwards proceeded to the topics of revelation, a resurrection to future life, and a final judgement by the man Christ Jesus. It would require too much room to point out particularly the spirit, propriety, and evidence of this short sermon. But no oratory or reasoning can change the heart. The effect was the same, as may be observed amongst ourselves, when much inferior instruments declare the truths of God: some mocked, and accounted this wisdom the merest folly; others, pleased with his *manner*, and perhaps affected with  
some



some transient emotions of mind, expressed a willingness to hear him again; and a few, a very few, believed, among whom was Dionysius, one of the Areopagite judges.

Having so little encouragement to prolong his stay at Athens, the apostle proceeded to Corinth, at that time accounted the chief city of Greece. Here he unexpectedly found companions prepared for him (1). Aquila, a native of Pontus, by birth a Jew, with Priscilla his wife, had received the faith of the gospel in Italy, from whence they had lately been constrained to remove by an edict of the Emperor, enjoining all Jews to depart from Rome. Whether the Christians were particularly aimed at by the name of Jews in this decree, is uncertain; but as their Lord and Master had lived in Judea, and the first preachers and converts were generally of that nation, perhaps likewise, because they asserted and proved their doctrines from those books for which the Jews professed the highest veneration, the Christians were for some time considered as Jews by most of the Heathens. This happy pair, partners in faith and affection, were led by that Divine Providence which certainly, though secretly, guides the steps of his servants, to seek a retreat in Corinth, about the time St Paul arrived there. They soon became acquainted, and, of course, intimate. He often mentions them in his writings, as having, upon many occasions, afforded him help and comfort; for, as in nature, so in grace, none are so sufficient to themselves, but they may be glad of assistance from others, even from such as are, in many respects, their inferiors. They abode and wrought together, being of the same business; for though St Paul well understood his liberty, and

(1) Acts, xviii.

that,



that, as a preacher of the gospel, he had a right to expect maintenance from those to whom he ministered, yet he condescended to work, as a common handicraft, at the employment of making tents. One reason of his submitting to this, he informs us himself, was a prudent precaution to obviate any insinuations that might be raised or received against him, of a design to make gain of godliness, or to abuse his influence to mercenary purposes. But his example may farther teach us, that secular employments are not *in themselves* incompatible with a faithful and regular discharge of the gospel-ministry, when the circumstances of the times may so require. But his main and proper business, to which he always attended in season and out of season \*, was preaching the gospel of Christ. To this he addressed himself at Corinth, first (as usual) to the Jews, being pressed in spirit, borne on by a constraining sense of the love of Christ and the worth of souls, and probably more confirmed and warmed by the accounts brought him by Timothy and Titus, who rejoined him here from Macedonia. Animated, rather than discouraged, by the opposition he had formerly met with, he strenuously urged to the Jews, from their own scriptures, the proofs that Jesus

\* 2 Tim. iv. 2. Be instant in season, and *out of season*; not unseasonably, as supposing a time in which it would be better to forbear, but *in season*, at set and stated times, and *out of season*, that is occasionally. Improve every opportunity that offers, not on the Lord's day only, but on any other; not only in a solemn and full discourse, but let the glory of God, and the good of souls, be your scope in every conversation! It answers to the account the apostle gives of his own conduct: He preached publicly, and from house to house, by night and by day, Acts, xx. 20. 31. As a physician, besides his ordinary round of practice, is ready to afford his help upon every sudden application; this should be the aim of a gospel-minister; he should be constant to all his stated appointments, and willing to make the most of every unexpected call to service.

was



was the Messiah, with such evidence as must have gained their assent, had they not been hardened and obstinate; but when they persisted in returning contradiction and despite to his repeated labours of love, he at length gave them up, and told them, that having discharged his duty and his conscience, their blood would be upon their own heads; that their guilt was most aggravated, and their destruction approaching; and that, for the future, he would frequent their synagogues no more, but address himself to the Gentiles. He accordingly preached in the house of one Justus, near the synagogue, and though most of the Jews were hardened beyond the reach of conviction, yet the Lord had a small remnant amongst them here likewise. Crispus, a chief ruler; or president of the synagogue, believed with all his house; and of the Heathens many were converted and baptized.

If Corinth was less celebrated than Athens for philosophy and science, it was more so for riches and luxury, which are no less powerful hindrances to the reception of the truth. This consideration, joined to the violent spirit of his opposers, might perhaps have prompted him to a speedy departure; but the Lord, whom he served, appeared to him in a vision, and bid him not be afraid or discouraged, but continue to preach, assuring him his labour should not be in vain; for, though present appearances might promise but little success, [A. D. 53.] he had many people known to himself in that proud, sensual, idolatrous city. It signifies but little what enemies or difficulties a faithful minister may be threatened with, if the Lord has many people in that place; he who sent him to call them out of darkness into his marvellous light, will support and defend him, so that either none shall rise against him, or at least none be able to prevail



prevail to his real harm. That the people, whom the Lord here spoke of as his own, were no better, either by nature or practice, than others, is plain from what the apostle reminds them of after their conversion, 1 Cor. vi. 9. — 11. We learn from the same epistle (1), that his conflicts and exercises at this time were very great. Supported, however, by such a seasonable and gracious encouragement, he remained there a year and half; and all the efforts of his enemies were insufficient either to damp his zeal and activity, or to prevent the success of his labours, though the Lord permitted them to try what they could do, and thereby more clearly shewed, that the safety of his servants depends on himself.

When Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, (who, as it seems by Luke's expression, entered upon his government during the apostle's abode at Corinth), the Jews appeared tumultuously before the tribunal, with the old accusation, that he subverted the laws of Moses. Gallio prevented Paul's intended defence, and refused to interfere in points foreign to the Roman laws: He said, that if their charge had been laid for any trespass or immorality, he would readily have taken cognizance of the affair, but should leave them to settle their religious disputes between themselves. With this reprimand he dismissed, or rather drove them from his presence. The conduct of Gallio in this affair has been considered in different lights, and praised or censured accordingly. History gives him a fair character for equity and moderation; and it must be allowed he judged right, in refusing to interpose the civil authority to give sanction to persecution: yet he seems, upon this occasion, to have discovered that political indifference which has

(1) 1 Cor. ii. 3.

prompted



prompted so many great and wise men, in the world's estimation, to treat the gospel as a trivial scheme unworthy their notice : He rather shewed contempt than impartiality ; he would not hear either party, because he despised both, and therefore drove them away with scorn. In fine, the Jews not only failed in their design, but were themselves assaulted by some of the inhabitants, who beat Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, even in the open court, and Gallio, tho' he saw it, cared for none of these things ; which is a farther proof that he was influenced by some other motives than impartiality and a regard to justice, or he would not have suffered his authority to be insulted, and a person (upon his own principles innocent) abused before his face. I suppose, (though it is a controverted point), that the Sosthenes here mentioned was at that time an enemy to Paul, and joined in the prosecution attempted against him. Perhaps he was afterwards converted, and accompanied the apostle in his travels, as this name is prefixed, with his own, to his first epistle to the Corinthians.

NERO, A. D. 54.] St Paul, after about two years stay in Greece, from his first landing at Macedonia, embarked at Cenchrea, the port of Corinth, intending for Syria. In this voyage they touched at Ephesus, the chief city of the Proper or Proconsular Asia. Here, as in other places, he entered into the Jews synagogues, desirous, if possible, to lead them to the knowledge of the Messiah. At this city he left his dear companions Aquila and Priscilla, who would willingly have detained him longer ; but St Paul, having formed the plan of his progress in such manner as he judged most suitable to his main design, readily sacrificed the dictates of affection to the calls of duty, and persisted in his purpose to be at Jerusalem on the approaching



approaching passover: he took leave of them, therefore, with a promise of returning at a proper time, and proceeding on his voyage, landed at Cæsarea, from whence he went to Jerusalem. His stay here was not long: having answered the design of his journey, and conversed with the brethren, he revisited the places where he had formerly preached, and went first to Antioch, and from thence through the provinces of Galatia and Phrygia. In this circuit he lost no time, but published the glad tidings of salvation, and confirmed the hearts of the disciples, where-ever he came.

While he was on this service, there came to Ephesus a Jew of Alexandria, named Apollos: he had been as yet only instructed in the rudiments of the faith, so far as was communicated by the teaching and baptism of John; but though his knowledge was not extensive, his zeal was lively and fervent, and having a prompt elocution, and great readiness in the scriptures, he preached concerning Christ with much freedom and earnestness, according to the measure of light he had received. Aquila and Priscilla were amongst his hearers; and having more experience and knowledge than himself, they easily perceived wherein he was deficient, and, with candour and tenderness, instructed him farther. This passage is worthy the notice both of preachers and hearers. What Apollos had learned he willingly communicated; what he was yet ignorant of, he as willingly received when proposed to him; his zeal and humility went hand in hand. This is an amiable and thriving character. The man who is faithful to present light, and open to farther conviction, will soon be wise and successful; the Lord will provide him both teachers and hearers; he shall profit others, and be profited himself every day. The prudence and moderation of Aquila and Priscilla are no less commendable; they

VOL. III. N did



did not acquiesce in all he said, because he was eloquent and mighty in the scriptures; neither did they reject and disdain him because they knew more than he, much less expose and revile him as a low ignorant preacher, but they spoke to him in private: they approved what was right, and shewed him mildly and faithfully wherein he was defective: they commended his zeal, and improved his knowledge. With these advantages, and letters of recommendation to the brethren, he went from thence to Corinth, where he was highly serviceable to the church, publicly maintaining and proving, against the Jews, with great earnestness of spirit and strength of argument, that Jesus was the Messiah.

Not long after his departure (1), Paul, having completed his progress through the Upper or interior parts of Asia Minor, returned, according to his promise, to Ephesus. Here he found some more disciples, who, like Apollos, though acquainted with the doctrine and baptism of John, were hitherto strangers to those peculiar gifts, graces, and comforts, which, as the fruits of the Holy Spirit, were bestowed on the believers in Jesus; but, by the imposition of the apostle's hands, they were immediately made partakers of the same benefits.

A. D. 55.] The apostle, unwilling to give up his own people, the Jews, continued his labours of love among them for three months, if, by any means, he might bring them to the acknowledgement of the truth; but at length perceiving, that, instead of yielding, they hardened themselves still more, and obstinately laboured to traduce and defame the author and way of salvation before the people, he finally desisted, and selecting those who

(1) Acts, xix.



had received the gospel from the many who might hinder and confuse them, he formed them into a society among themselves. He continued daily to preach and defend the gospel, for two years afterwards, in a public school, with indefatigable zeal and diligence, seconding his more stated services with occasional and pressing exhortations from house to house, and watering the seed with many prayers and tears. His labours were not in vain; he had great success, not only in the city of Ephesus, but amongst many, who, resorting thither from other parts, and with different views, were providentially led to hear him, and being divinely convinced themselves, carried home the joyful tidings with them: so that the knowledge of the gospel was generally spread throughout the province. The attention of the people was still farther excited, and their prejudices softened, by the numerous displays and visible tendency of that divine power by which the Lord confirmed the words of his servant. Many striking miracles, emblematical of the healing efficacy of gospel-grace, were wrought by the most inconsiderable means; so that persons afflicted with various maladies, or possessed by evil spirits, were perfectly restored to health, by the application of handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched his body.

Among the various methods by which the gospel has been opposed, one is by a feeble imitation and a pretended acknowledgement of some of its principles, while the heart is unacquainted or unaffected with the design and scope of the whole doctrine. Enmity, or at best interest, is often the spring of many attempts that are veiled under a fair profession of good words; but such attempts will always issue in the disappointment or confusion of those who venture on them. An instance of this kind happened at Ephesus: Some vagrant Jews, who



made claim to a power of exorcising or dispossessing evil spirits, struck with the miracles wrought in the name of Jesus, presumed to adopt this sacred name into the number of their professed mysteries; and meeting with a fit subject for the exercise of their art, they undertook to adjure the evil spirit to depart from a man, by the name of Jesus whom Paul preached. But the man under the influence of the evil spirit, insulted and exposed them: he acknowledged the authority of Jesus, and the fidelity of Paul; but, demanding farther, who they were that durst make free with these names? far from obeying their summons, he fiercely assaulted them, and forced them, though seven in number, to flee for their lives, naked, wounded, and terrified. Great indeed is the power of the name of Jesus; but when not pronounced by faith, it is spoken in vain: Satan laughs at such vain pretenders, and prevails against them. So, when those who are destitute of faith, undertake to write or preach concerning Jesus, it will seldom prove to more purpose than if they attempted to exorcise the people: instead of delivering others from the power of Satan, they are more and more subjected to him themselves; and, unless the grace of God interposes to teach them better, their latter end is usually worse than their beginning.

This public defeat of the enemy added to the triumph of the gospel and the honour of the apostle, and produced a reverence and awe in the hearts of many, convincing them of the power of evil spirits when not restrained, and the danger of trifling with the name or ministry of Christ; and many who had been addicted to the magic arts (for which Ephesus was peculiarly infamous) renounced their delusions, confessed their folly and wickedness to the apostle, made public profession of the gospel, and, in proof that their faith and repentance were



were sincere, brought the books containing the secrets and principles of their pretended skill, and publicly committed them to the flames. These were either so numerous, or so dear, that the value was computed at fifty thousand pieces of silver. What this sum might be in our money, the learned are not agreed; the lowest calculations fix it at about fifteen hundred pounds, while some compute it at more than seven thousand. We are not, however, sure they were all on the subject of magic: a variety of other disquisitions might possibly contribute to enlarge the pile. Curious books and curious arts had been multiplied; but the one book of truth now made the rest useless and tasteless: they had now found the pearl of great price, and willingly parted with their once-admired pebbles: and we may believe, that if the worth and power of the holy scriptures were once generally known, many curious libraries in our days, if they escaped unburnt, would at least remain unread and unnoticed. When the wise thus renounced their wisdom, and the artful their gain, burnt their books with their own hands, and devoted themselves to the study of the scriptures alone, it is once more observed, so mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed!

A. D. 57.] The apostle, of whom it may be said with more propriety than of Cæsar, that he accounted nothing done while any thing remained to do, in the midst of his important engagements at Ephesus, was still meditating new services; he retained a warm affection and care for his friends in different, distant, and opposite quarters; he had thoughts of revisiting Macedonia and Greece, and, from thence, once more to go to Jerusalem; and, not content with reviewing his past labours, he longed to preach in places he had not yet seen,—saying, After I have been there, I must also see

N 3.

Rome:.



Rome : nor was Rome the boundary of his views ; for from thence he proposed to proceed to Spain (1). We are taught from our infancy to admire those, who, in the language of the world, are styled great captains and conquerors, because they burned with a desire to carry slaughter and terror into every part of the globe, and to aggrandize their names by the depopulation of countries, and the destruction of their species, while this generous spirit of St Paul is almost totally overlooked : unwearied by difficulties, undismayed by dangers, unsatisfied with the greatest success, unaffected with the justest applause, he seemed to lay his benevolent schemes wide as the human race : he reaped no profit, he sought no praise ; he rejected the allurements of pleasure, to which the greatest conquerors have often been irresolute slaves ; he endured the reproach and contempt of the people, which no hero, but the true Christian, was ever strong enough to bear with patience ; and all this only to make others partakers of the happiness which he enjoyed himself. However, finding it necessary to continue some time longer where he was, he dispatched his beloved Timothy to Macedonia, to apprise his friends of his intention, and to prepare them for his visit, when a proper opportunity should permit.

In the mean time, an incident fell out which well illustrates the causes and genius of that opposition and outcry which is usually made when the power of gospel-truth interferes with the passions and interests of designing men. St Paul's great success, and the additions daily made to the church of Christ, had a visible tendency to lessen the estimation and gain of those whose chief resource was in the ignorance and wickedness of the people.

(1) Rom. xv. 24.

These



These were not backward to take the alarm, and had been waiting an opportunity to shew their resentment. The Lord, who holds all hearts in his own hands, had restrained them hitherto, that his work of grace might not be disturbed; but when the apostle was upon the point of departure, this restraint was in some measure taken off. The temple of Diana, at Ephesus, was celebrated for its magnificence far and near; so that many shrines or models of it were made for sale, and in much demand. This branch of business brought in considerable gain to the silversmiths and other mechanics; but if the gospel of Christ continued to spread, it was highly probable that these, with many other such toys, would be little inquired after. Demetrius, a leading man amongst them, conveying his brethren and dependents, and as many as he could whose interest seemed most immediately affected by this novel doctrine, harangued them with much address and influence on a point in which they had so near and mutual a concern; he reminded them, with a seasonable frankness, that their gain was at stake \*: This was the main argument; yet, as one not wholly governed by mercenary views, he expressed a very tender concern for the honour of Diana, lest her worship, and their advantage, should cease together, as they certainly would, if this Paul should be peaceably suffered to persuade the people, that they can be no gods which are made with hands. An appeal to the two prevailing passions of mankind, interest,

\* This is the main objection against the gospel, though pretexts are industriously sought to hide it; it alarms those who thrive by the ignorance or wickedness of the times: gain is the motive, the honour of Diana the plea. But it may be easily proved, that such occupations as are endangered by the success of the gospel, are in themselves injurious to the peace and good order of civil society.

and



and superstition is seldom made in vain. The arguments of Demetrius have been employed a thousand times over against the gospel, though all opposers have not had his honesty in avowing their leading motive. The doctrine which discountsenances folly and wickedness, will certainly be defamed and resisted by all who find their account in promoting them; but as this motive is rather invidious, if insisted on alone, they express likewise an earnest zeal for whatever tenets have the sanction of authority, antiquity, or custom, with which their private interest is inseparably connected. He had said enough to inflame his hearers; and these were sufficiently numerous to stimulate the unthinking rabble, who, though quiet till they are headed by artful leaders, are easily roused to rage and tumult when thus influenced, as the sea that has been long calm obeys the impulse of the rising gale. The outcry began by Demetrius and his companions; Great is Diana of the Ephesians, was soon resounded through the city; and the multitude being informed, that their established religion, their stately temple, and costly rites, were all in danger, rushed from all parts tumultuously into the public theatre, dragging two of St Paul's dear companions, Gaius and Aristarchus, along with them, perhaps with a design to throw them to the wild beasts, which were kept for the barbarous diversion of the people at their public games. The apostle, warmly concerned for his friends safety, and confiding in the goodness of his cause, and the providence of his God, was not intimidated by this violent uproar, but purposed to face the enraged mob; but the earnest solicitations of the disciples, who could not but be anxious for the event, restrained him: and even some who had not received his doctrine, from a regard to what they knew of his character and conduct, employed their  
their



their endeavours to preserve him. These, in the text, are styled Asiarchs, persons of note who presided in the regulation of the games. Some of them sent to inform him, that, in the present confusion, it was not in their power to protect him from violence, and therefore desired he would keep in safety. Though his resolution was not shaken, yet judging this might be a providential intimation, that it was not his duty at that time to expose himself, he desisted. The mob, thus disappointed with respect to him, and secretly restrained from hurting the others, continued in the utmost confusion, though few knew why they were assembled, unless it was to join in the cry, Great is Diana of the Ephesians, which they repeated, without intermission, for two hours. When they had thus exhausted themselves, and their passions, through weariness, began to subside, a public officer of the city seized the favourable moment to expostulate with them concerning their behaviour: he spoke with freedom and address, but with that indifference which the wise men of the world so frequently discover in religious concerns. Many deserve commendation for their readiness to allow others the peaceable possession of their own sentiments, who, at the same time, call for our pity, that they have no inclination or leisure to inquire for themselves. He allowed, in general terms, the honours of Diana, and pleaded, in behalf of the men, that they had not spoke against Diana in particular, or intermeddled with her temple \*. This was probably true in fact: St Paul declared the folly of idolatry in general,

\* *Are neither robbers of churches*, ver. 37. should rather be rendered *robbers of temples*; for though the word *church* is now expressive of some particular places of worship, it is never in the New Testament applied to buildings, but to persons only.

but



but did not enter into direct confutation of any detached part of the Heathen mythology: he proposed the plain truth of the gospel; and when this was received, the whole system of idol-worship fell to the ground of itself. He farther reminded them, that if they had any just cause of complaint, they ought to seek redress in a course of law \*; and then hinting at the consequences they were liable to, if called to a strict account † for their riot, he prevailed on them to separate and depart quietly. Thus the apostle, though threatened with a most imminent and formidable danger, was preserved unhurt, and suffered neither in his person nor character: An encouraging proof that those who act in the path of duty, and depend on the power of God, are equally safe in all times and circumstances; no less safe, when surrounded by enraged enemies, than when encircled by kind and assiduous friends.

He did not continue long at Ephesus after this tumult; but, taking leave of the disciples, he went to Troas, and from thence (as he had purposed) to Macedonia (1). We have but little account of this progress in the history of the Acts; but from some passages of his epistles (2), written about that time, we are informed that his exercises and trials, both inward and outward, were very

\* The servants of Christ will seldom be compelled to answer for themselves in a course of law, except in those places where sanguinary laws are contrived purposely against them. In default of these, their adversaries will often sloop to appeal from the magistrate to the mob.

† It seems, however, there was no more said of it. It had been a notorious breach of the peace; but then it had been against St Paul and his companions, who had sufficient favour shewn them if they came off with their lives. In any other case, such a tumult would have been deemed an high offence.

(1) Acts, xx.

(2) 2 Cor. ii. 12. 13. and vii. 5.

great.



great. His solicitous affection for the churches was far from being the smallest source of his troubles, and cost him many a pang\*: he loved them in the bowels of Jesus Christ; he could willingly have devoted his labours and life to each of them, but he could not be with them all; and knowing the weakness of the heart, the subtlety of Satan, and the obvious temptations arising from the fear of man, the love of the world, and the arts of false teachers, he was jealous over those from whom he was absent with a godly jealousy (1). At Troas he expected to have met with Titus, on his return from Macedonia; but missing him, tho' he had favourable opportunities of preaching the gospel at Troas (2), his mind was not at liberty to improve them; but he hastened to be in Macedonia, that he might the sooner be satisfied. There, he tells us himself, he had no rest, but was troubled on every side; without were fightings, within were fears; but he speaks of it as a seasonable and gracious interposition of that God, whose character (3) and prerogative it is to be a comforter of those that are cast down, that, in these circumstances, he was comforted by the coming of Titus, who relieved his fears by the favourable account he brought him from Corinth.

\* See 2 Cor. xi. 28. That which cometh on me daily. The word is *περισσους*,—and gives the idea of a camp or castle hard beset with continual onsets and assaults; or of a man who has his way to force through a great crowd that are coming to meet him; so that he must not only be much incumbered and hindered, but, unless he exerts himself to the utmost, is in danger of being trampled under their feet. By this lively figure, the apostle describes the part he took in the welfare of all the churches. His cares on their behalf were so numerous, urgent, and continual, that they found full employment for his prayers, his thoughts, and his time.

(1) 2 Cor. xi. 1.

(3) 2 Cor. vii. 6.

(2) 2 Cor. ii. 12. 13.



A. D. 58.]. How long he staid in these parts we are not told; but, in general, that he spent some time, and visited many places; and it seems to have been in this circuit that he preached in Illyricum, a part of which country borders upon Macedonia. He afterwards proceeded to Greece, where he staid three months: he intended to have embarked from thence at some port, and to have proceeded immediately to Syria by sea; but, upon information that his restless enemies the Jews were plotting to intercept and kill him, he determined to return through Macedonia. Several of his friends offered to accompany him through Asia; who, embarking before him, waited for him at Troas, where he, at a convenient time, joined them from Philippi, and remained there seven days.

On the first day of the week they had a solemn assembly; and St Paul, who was to take a long and last farewell of the disciples there the next morning, indulged his own and their affections, by protracting his discourses and advices beyond the usual bounds; he spent the whole day, even till midnight, in expatiating upon the pleasing topics of redeeming love. This does not indeed appear to have been his usual practice; but should a company of believers now spend a night together in the exercises they best love, though it were but once, and when they had no expectation of meeting again till they should meet in glory, it would be sufficient to open the mouths of prejudice and slander against them, as regardless of the order of families, and the duties of common life. Particular notice is taken, that they had many lights in the upper chamber where they were met, perhaps to remind us, that the first Christians were careful to conduct their assemblies with order and propriety, so as to give no just cause of offence; yet their enemies



enemies quickly began to charge them with meeting in the dark, and invented many false and wicked slanders upon that supposition. The like falsehoods have been often repeated. A young man of the company, either less attentive, or less warmly engaged than the rest, dropped asleep, and not only lost much of an invaluable opportunity, but fell out of a window in which he was seated, from the third story, and was taken up to appearance dead; an incident which might have given those who hated the apostle a farther occasion to clamour, and to revile his unseasonable zeal; but he went down in the spirit of faith and prayer, and embracing the young man, restored him to his friends alive. After they were recovered from the hurry of this event, and had taken some refreshment, he resumed his discourse, and continued in conference \* with them till the break of day, when he bid them farewell.

His companions went along the coast by shipping to Assos, a place not very distant, and to which the apostle chose to go by land, and on foot. Some think he did this by way of self-denial; but it is not likely that he, who was the great assertor of evangelical and filial liberty, would lay any stress upon such singularities. Self may readily submit to many things of this sort, and derive food, complacence, and strength from them. It is more probable he chose to walk either that he might embrace occasions of service by the way, or for the

\* This, as we have observed, was upon a particular occasion; they expected to see each other no more, and hardly knew how to part. The like circumstances might justify such protracted meetings of Christian friends still; but in general they are to be avoided: if frequently indulged, they would break in upon other things, indispose those who attend for the ordinary duties of their stations, be prejudicial to health, and for these, and other reasons prove a cause of offence.



advantage of leisure and retirement; for Christians engaged in a very public sphere of life (as he was) are glad to redeem opportunities of being alone, at the price of some inconveniencies. But this circumstance is mentioned as characterising the simplicity of his spirit; though greatly honoured, and greatly beloved, he thought it not beneath him to walk from place to place, like an obscure person.

Imbarking at Assos, and having touched at Mitylene and Samos, intermediate places, they arrived in a few days at Miletus. St Paul purposely passed Ephesus, that he might not be detained or grieved by the many dear friends he had in that city; for he was resolved, if possible, to be at Jerusalem on the approaching day of Pentecost; but from Miletus he sent for the elders or bishops of the church at Ephesus, to receive his final charge and benediction. When they came, he addressed them in a solemn and affectionate discourse. The substance of it, which is recorded for our instruction, if considered only as a piece of oratory, has been often admired and celebrated by critics: but there are strokes in it, the force and beauty of which no critic can truly relish, except he has tasted of the same spirit which filled and animated the apostle's heart when he spoke it.

He began with an appeal to themselves concerning his conduct while resident among them, and reminded them of the diligence, fidelity, and tenderness, which he had manifested in the course of his ministry, how he had seconded his public instructions with private and repeated exhortations, watering them both with many prayers and tears: he informed them of the *object* and service of his present journey, and how uncertain he was what the issue might prove to himself. But though he had general intimations from the Spirit of God, to expect afflictions and bonds in every place, his determination



determination was fixed; he had counted the cost, and saw that nothing he could meet with was worth his serious thought, so that he might be able to fulfil his ministry with honour, and to finish his course with joy \*; but this he said he was assured of, that the pleasing opportunities he had enjoyed with the believers at Ephesus, and in that neighbourhood, were ended; and that they now saw and heard him for the last time. Only those who know the endeared affection that subsists between a minister of Christ and those to whom God has made him the instrument of saving their souls, can judge of the emotion with which he spoke, and his friends heard, this part of his discourse. When he had thus touched and engaged their tenderest passions, and prepared them to receive his parting solemn charge with a due attention, he exhorted them, in the most animated terms, to follow his example, in performing the part of faithful overseers, or bishops, in the church which he now committed to their care; suggesting two most powerful motives, the consideration, that they were appointed to this office by the Holy Ghost, and that the souls intrusted to them were the church of God, which he had purchased with his own blood. He likewise warned them, that the utmost circumspection would be needful; for that he foresaw, that after his departure grievous wolves would enter amongst

\* The state of obedience and service which we owe to him who died for us, and rose again, is often compared to a race or course; by which is intimated, the assiduity with which we ought to pursue our calling, the brevity of our labours and sufferings, the little attention we should pay to objects around us, and that our eye and aim should be constantly directed to the prize set before us. Every step in this race is attended with trouble; but the end will be unspeakable joy. Those to whom the King shall say, "Well done, good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord," will not then complain of the difficulties they met by the way.



them, not sparing the flock; and also that out of their own number of professed disciples, men should arise speaking perverse things. This double danger of false teachers from without, and restless curious spirits within the fold, all societies of Christians are exposed to; and it is a strong call to ministers, in all ages, to be mindful of the apostle's charge, and to take heed to the flock over which the Holy Ghost has made them overseers. He again put them in remembrance of his own conduct, his assiduity and disinterestedness; that he had not sought his own advantage, but had rather wrought with his own hands, that he might not be chargeable to them; finally, commending them to God, and the word of his grace, he closed his discourse, with proposing to their considerations an aphorism of our Lord Jesus, and illustrated by the whole tenor of his life, "It is more blessed to give than to receive." This sentiment, so highly expressive of the spirit of the divine author, which had been hitherto preserved in the hearts and mouths of his disciples, was, upon this occasion, inserted into the written word, and is the only authentic tradition concerning him which has been transmitted to the church. Having finished his pathetic address, he kneeled down, and prayed with them. The final farewell was very affecting; for how could those who owed him their souls, who had been so often comforted and edified by his instructions and example, consider that they were to see him no more in this world, without being greatly moved? They accompanied him to the ship, and then returned. The word which Luke the historian makes use of upon this occasion, intimates that the concern was mutual; it signifies, to draw asunder by force, to separate things closely joined together: "When we had gotten from them," or, as it might be rendered, "When we had



“ had torn ourselves from them,” well expresses the close union of their affections, and the sorrow and reluctance which both sides felt at parting.

When this struggle (1) was over, St Paul and his company put to sea with a favourable gale; and having touched at Coos and Rhodes, two islands of note in the *Ægean* sea, continued their course to Patara in Lycia, where they seasonably met with a ship upon the point of departure for Phœnicia; and imbarking in her, they passed on the south side of Cyprus, and had a safe voyage to Tyre; which being the destined port of the vessel, they landed. As he was now not very far distant from Jerusalem, and had finished that part of his voyage in which he was most exposed to unavoidable delays by the occurrences of winds and weather; so that he had a fair probability of reaching Jerusalem within his prescribed time, he consented to stay seven days with some disciples \* he found there. From some of these he received an intimation, by a prophetic impulse, of the dangers he would be exposed to if he went to Jerusalem; but he knew whom he had believed; and being convinced that his duty called him to persevere, he was not intimidated by a prospect of suffering. At the appointed time he embarked again, the disciples, with their families, accompanying him to the water-side, where he took leave of them in an affectionate prayer upon the sea-

\* Vers 4. *Ανευρεντες τους μαθητας* might be rendered, *Finding out the disciples*. There seems no reason for suppressing the article; and the verb is used for finding out, in consequence of some description or inquiry, Luke, ii. 16. We readily suppose, from the apostle's character, that his first inquiry upon coming to any place where the gospel had been preached, related to those who loved the Lord Jesus, and how they were to be met with.

(1) Acts, xxi.



shore \*. He landed next at Ptolemais, a city of Galilee, and staid one day with the brethren there. The next day he proceeded to Cæsarea, and lodged at the house of Philip the deacon, who had four daughters endued with the spirit of prophecy.

During his stay at Cæsarea, a prophet, named *Agabus*, came down from Jerusalem; and, agreeable to the manner of the ancient prophets, who frequently enforced their declarations by expressive signs and actions, he bound his own hands and feet with the apostle's girdle; assuring them, in the name of the Holy Spirit, that in the same manner the Jews would bind the hands and feet of the man to whom that girdle belonged, and deliver him up as a criminal to the Roman power. Upon these repeated premonitions of what he was to expect, not only the disciples of Cæsarea, but those who had come with him, earnestly intreated him to desist from his purpose. We may learn from this passage, that the clearest intelligence of approaching danger is not always a sufficient warrant to decline it, even when, in the judgement of our brethren, we might decline it without sin. St Paul was satisfied, that, all circumstances considered, it was right for him to proceed; he had taken his determination upon good grounds, was brought so far on his way in safety; and to be told, (tho' from an infallible authority), that his views of service could not be completed without great risk and trouble to himself, did not discourage him in the least. He was less affected by the prospect of sufferings from the Jews than by the solicitations of his friends, and told them, that though they could

\* Could many persons now living have seen this, without doubt they would have said, they had seen a strange company of enthusiasts and fanatics.



not shake his resolution, their concern and importunity exceedingly distressed him. What mean you to weep, and to break my heart? I am ready, not to be bound only, but also to die, for the sake of the Lord Jesus. In this short speech we may discern a spirit which is indeed the honour of human nature. Inflexibly firm to his character and duty, yet expressing the most tender feelings for his friends; while he contemplated the severest trials that might affect *himself* unmoved, he was almost overpowered by what he *felt* for *others*. But when they saw that he was not to be dissuaded, they desisted from their suit, and acquiesced in the will of the Lord.

A. D. 60.] Having staid some time at Cæsarea, he proceeded to Jerusalem; his friends, who had crossed the sea with him, resolving to expose themselves to a share of the dangers from which they could not divert him. They were accompanied likewise by an old disciple, named *Mnason*, of Cyprus, who resided at Jerusalem, and had offered his house for their accommodation. Their arrival was welcome to the brethren; and the next day St Paul introduced his friends to St James and the elders, who seem to have met together on purpose to receive him. To them he gave a succinct account of the success with which God had honoured his ministry among the Gentiles; which when they had heard, they unanimously glorified God on his behalf, and rejoiced to hear of the accession of such numbers to the Christian faith (1). But at the same time they gave him to understand, that the bulk of the Jewish converts had received no small prejudice against him; that there were even many thousands who had heard and believed hard things of him, as one who taught the Jews to apostatize from the law of Moses, and

(1) Acts, xxi.

forbade



forbade them to practise circumcision, and the other rites and customs of their forefathers. In order to shew them that this charge was groundless, they advised him to join himself publicly with four men who were under a vow, and to attend with them the prescribed course of purification in the temple.

From this passage we are led to remark, that, through the weakness of human nature, the prejudices of education, and the arts of Satan, many thousands of professed Christians, in the first and purest period of the primitive church, while under the care of the apostles, had imbibed, from hearsay, a degree of coldness and dislike towards one of the Lord's most faithful and most favoured servants. How far the method St Paul was advised to pursue, for the removal of this misapprehension, was suited to his character and known integrity, is a question not easily determined. The apostles, considered in one light, as the penmen of a large part of the sacred canon of faith and practice, which the Lord was pleased by them to communicate to his church, were doubtless so far under the full direction and inspiration of his Holy Spirit; but we have no reason to believe, that in every part of their own personal conduct they were strictly infallible; nay, we have good warrant to conclude the contrary, as St Paul himself assures us, that upon a certain occasion, already mentioned, he withstood Peter to his face, because he was to be blamed. It is therefore no way derogatory from the character and authority of St Paul, to inquire, whether, upon this occasion, the tenderness of his spirit towards weak believers, and his desire of becoming all things to all men, when the foundation-truths of the gospel were not affected, might not carry him too far: for though a reserve was made by James, in favour of the Gentile converts, that



that they should not be burdened with the observance of Jewish rites; yet the express end and design for which this step was proposed to him, and for which he seems to have undertaken it, was, that all might know or believe, not only that he was not against others adhering to the Jewish ceremonies, but that he likewise orderly and statedly practised them himself: A circumstance which is far from being clear, or indeed probable, if we consider the strain of his epistle to the Galatians; which, though the addition at the close of our copies mentions as sent from Rome, is generally allowed to have been written during his stay at Ephesus at the latest, if not sooner; and further, that for some time past his converse had been almost wholly confined to the Gentile believers, or to those churches of which they formed the largest part. If he became as a Jew amongst the Jews, it was, as he says himself, only with the hope of gaining (1) the Jews; which motive could no longer take place when he had finally withdrawn from their synagogues. Those, therefore, who suppose, that in this instance he was over persuaded to deviate from that openness of conduct which he generally maintained, seem to have some ground for their suspicion. This, however, is certain, his temporising did not answer the proposed end; but, instead of rendering him more acceptable, involved him in the greatest danger: for when the seven days were almost fulfilled, some Jews of Asia, seeing him in the temple, pointed him out to the multitude as the dangerous man who had apostatised from his religion, and was using his endeavours, where-ever he went, to draw people from the worship of God according to the law of Moses. To this they added, that he had profaned the holy place, by bringing Gentiles with him into the temple. This they conjectured from having seen Trophymus,

(1) 1 Cor. ix. 20.



Trophymus, an Ephesian, with him in the city. This part of the charge was wholly false : he had not brought his Gentile friends into the temple ; but he appeared so publicly with them upon other occasions, as to give some room for a surmise of this sort. If he submitted to the proposal of the elders, and attended in the temple himself, for the satisfaction of the Jewish converts, he would not go so far as to be ashamed of his friends, to make himself more acceptable to his enemies. It is our duty to avoid giving just offence ; but if we boldly and honestly avow the Lord's people upon all proper occasions, without regard to names and parties, we must expect to suffer from the zealots of all sides.

Those who first laid hands on him were soon assisted by great numbers ; for the whole city was moved, and the people ran together from all quarters. They dragged him out of the temple, and were upon the point of killing him, without giving him time or leave to speak a word for himself : they thought him absolutely in their power ; but they were prevented by the appearance of Lyfias, a Roman officer, who had a post near the temple, to prevent or suppress insurrections. Upon the first notice he received of this disturbance, he came down with a party of soldiers. The evangelist observes, that when the Jews ran to kill Paul, the Romans ran to save him. Thus the succour the Lord provides for his people is always proportioned to the case, and effectual to the end. When danger is pressing, relief is speedy. Lyfias, though ignorant of the cause of this tumult, judging, by its violence, that the apostle must have been some great malefactor, commanded him to be bound with two chains ; and when he could obtain no satisfactory information from the people, had him removed to the castle, or Roman station.

But



But such was the violence of the incensed unmeaning multitude, that the soldiers were constrained to carry him in their arms up the steps, or stairs, which led thither from the temple. Here Paul obtained leave to speak for himself, the tribune inclining rather to a more favourable opinion of him, when he found he could speak Greek; and the people attended with some composure, when they heard him address them in the Hebrew or Syriac language.

In his discourse (1) he told them, that he had been brought up amongst themselves, and appealing to the high-priest and elders concerning the zeal and earnestness with which he had formerly served their party, he related the extraordinary dispensation by which the Lord Jesus had conquered his heart. This was St Paul's usual method of defence, and though no means are sufficient to reach the heart without a divine influence, yet, humanly speaking, a simple and faithful declaration of what God has done for our souls, seems most likely to convince, or at least to soften and silence, those who oppose. Enraged as the Jews had been, they listened with patience to his relation till he proceeded to intimate the Lord's designs in favour of the Gentiles, and that he was appointed an apostle to them. Accustomed to despise the rest of mankind, and to deem themselves the only people of God, they could not bear this; they interrupted him instantly, and, with one voice, declared it was not fit such a fellow should live upon the earth: they cast off their clothes, threw dust in the air, and their fury seemed to deprive them of their reason. Lyfias, the tribune, secured him from their violence, but commanded him to be examined by scourging, that he might know his crime from his

(1) Acts, xxii.



own mouth, according to a barbarous custom of putting those to torture against whom there was no sufficient evidence, that their own extorted confession might furnish some grounds of proceeding against them: a custom still prevalent in most countries called Christian, though contrary to religion, to reason, and to the common sentiments of humanity. Our Lord Jesus was examined in this manner before Pilate; and though the apostle was ready to follow the steps of his master in suffering, yet upon this occasion he pleaded his right of exemption from such treatment, as being a native of Tarsus, a city honoured with the freedom of Rome. A Roman citizen was not legally liable either to be bound or scourged: therefore, when the tribune understood his privilege, he stopped farther proceedings, and was something apprehensive for himself, that he had in part violated them already, by ordering him to be bound \*; but being still desirous to know what was laid to his charge, he convened the chief priests and the members of the Sanhedrim on the next day, and brought him again before them.

The apostle, fixing his eyes upon the high priest and council, as one who was neither ashamed nor afraid (1) to appear at their tribunal, began with a declaration, that he had lived to that day in the exercise of a good conscience: but Ananias, the high priest, forgetting his character as a judge, commanded those who stood near to strike him on the face. The apostle severely rebuked his partiality, in perverting the cause of justice, and *warned* him of the righteous judgement of God, the fu-

\* A Roman citizen might be bound with a chain, but not tied with thongs, or beaten with rods: "Facinus est vinciri civem Romanum, scelus verberari." CICERO.

(1) Acts, xxiii.



preme judge, who would surely punish his hypocrisy \*. His reply to those who reproved him for speaking in such terms to the high priest, seems to intimate, that the injurious treatment he had received had raised an undue warmth in his spirit, tho' it may be supposed that he denounced his future doom under a superior and prophetic impulse; but knowing that the council was composed of Pharisees and Sadducees, who were at variance amongst themselves about several weighty points, particularly the doctrine of a resurrection, he declared himself a Pharisee, and that the opposition he met with from the Sadducees was owing to his belief and hope in that doctrine. The Pharisees immediately suspended their present resentment, to embrace the occasion offered of opposing their old antagonists, and upon this issue espoused his cause, declaring him innocent; and said, that if a spirit or angel (the existence of both which the Sadducees denied) had spoken to him, they ought not to fight against God, by refusing to hear him. Upon this a great dissension took place, and Lyfias, fearing that Paul would be torn in pieces between the contending parties, put an end to the conference, and ordered the soldiers to take him by force, and secure him in the castle. It is indeed often well for believers, that the people of the world, though agreed in one point, namely, To oppose the gospel, are divided and subdivided in other respects; so that, for the sake of a favourite passion, or to cross an opposite interest, they will sometimes protect those whom they would otherwise willingly destroy.

The next night he received full amends for all he had suffered, and was confirmed against the ut-

\* Thou whited wall!—A clay-wall, glossed over with white, is an apt emblem of a man who carries on a malicious design under the pretence and forms of justice. Hatred is the character, and dreadfully dangerous the condition of such.



most efforts of his enemies malice; for the Lord Jesus, whom he served, vouchsafed to appear to him in a vision, commanded him to be of good cheer, owned his gracious acceptance of his late testimony in Jerusalem, and promised, that none should hinder him the honour of bearing witness to his truth at Rome likewise. The world has been sometimes surpris'd at the confidence which the faithful servants of Christ have shewn in the midst of dangers, and in the face of death; but if their supports were known, the wonder would cease. If the Lord speaks, his word is effectual; and when he says, Be of good courage, and fear not! his people, out of weakness, are made strong.

Little were the incredulous Jews aware of what a power and vigilance were engaged in his preservation; and therefore, impatient of delays, they resolved to destroy him immediately. To manifest their resolution, and to quicken their diligence, more than forty of them bound themselves, under the penalty of the great curse, or anathema, not to eat or drink till they had killed him. They acquainted the priests and rulers with their engagement, and propos'd, that they should request Lyfias to order him once more to appear before them in council, and that then those who had combined in this oath would be ready to assassinate him. But no counsel or device can stand against the Lord! This black design was, by some means, providentially made known to a young man who was Paul's sister's son, who gave notice of it first to him, and then, by his desire, to Lyfias, who, finding the Jews implacably bent against Paul's life, determin'd to place him farther out of their reach, and accordingly sent him away, that same night, under a strong guard, who conducted him to Cæsarea, and delivered him to Felix, the Roman governor, together with a letter from Lyfias, importing his care  
to



to preserve the prisoner, because he understood him to be a Roman citizen, and that he had commanded his accusers to follow. Thus the conspiracy which his enemies had formed to destroy him, proved the occasion of his deliverance out of their hands.

In about five days afterwards, Ananias the high priest, with the elders of the council, appeared (1) before Felix against Paul. The charge was opened by Tertullus, a venal orator, or advocate, whom they had retained for this purpose; who began with a commendation of the governor, in terms which might have suited the illustrious actions and wise measures of princes studious of the public good, but were ill applied to Felix, (who was infamous for his cruelty and oppression), and in the name of the Jews, who hated him. But enmity to the gospel will make men stoop to the meanest flattery and servility, if by that means they have hope of gaining their point! The sum of the accusation was, That Paul was an enemy to church and state, a disturber of the established religion, and a mover of sedition against the government; to which was added, as a popular proof of the charge, that he was a ringleader of the sect or heresy of the Nazarenes, so called from Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified by a former governor for asserting himself to be a king. Thus much seems implied in the term *Nazarene*, as the Jews used it. The apostle began his defence with a protestation of his innocence, as to any design of moving sedition or tumult, which he said his enemies were unable to prove by a single fact: he proceeded to inform the governor of the true motives of their enmity against him, and acknowledged that he worshipped God in a way which they stigmatized with the

(1) Act. xxiv.



name of heresy or division; for the proper \* meaning of heresy is no more than sect or party. By farther declaring, that he worshipped the God of his fathers, and believed all things written in the law and the prophets, he proved, from the object and the manner of his worship, that he was not guilty of any blameable innovations: he professed the hope of a resurrection, which his enemies could not but allow, and that it was his constant study † and endeavour to maintain a conscience void of offence; and added, that it was not he, but the Jews themselves, who had raised the tumult, by assaulting him when he was peaceably attending in the temple, according to the prescribed rules. He observed that his first accusers were not present, as they ought to have been; and challenged any who

\* As the apostle only cautions Titus to reject or avoid a heretic, Tit. iii. 10. but has not defined him expressly, many writers and teachers have had a fair field to exercise their skill or their passions upon the subject; yet the question is far from determined to this day. Some would treat all those as heretics, who differ from them either in judgement or practice; others explain the word quite away, as though the admonition to avoid a heretic was wholly unnecessary. Perhaps the advice to Titus is nearly, if not exactly, equivalent to Rom. xvi. 17. The spirit of truth produces unity; the spirit of division is heresy. And the man who fiercely stickles for opinions of his own, who acts contrary to the peaceable, forbearing, humble spirit of the gospel, who affects to form a party, and to be thought considerable in it, is so far a heretic.

† Acts, xxiv. 16. The Greek word here used (*αγων*) denotes the study, diligence, and proficiency of a person who is desirous to excel and be eminent in any particular art: as a painter, for instance, he searches out the best masters and the best pieces, he studies and copies the beauties of others works, and is continually retouching and improving upon his own; his acquaintance, reflections, and recreations, are all accommodated to his main purpose; and though his pencil is sometimes at rest, his imagination is seldom idle. Similar to this is the exercise of a good conscience, formed upon the model of the scripture, and improved by diligence, meditation, examination, and experience.

WERG



were within hearing to prove their allegations in any one instance.

Felix having perhaps a favourable opinion of the Christian profession, which had been settled some time at Cæsarea, and being likewise desirous of farther information, deferred the full discussion of the affair till the arrival of Lyfias, and committed Paul, in the mean time, to the care of a centurion, as a prisoner at large, allowing him to go abroad in the city, and giving his friends liberty to visit him at home. And thus he was providentially delivered from the blood-thirsty Jews, and found an asylum in the Roman power, which they had endeavoured to engage for his destruction.

A. D. 59.] He was sent for, not long after, by Felix, and discoursed before him and his wife Drusilla concerning the faith of Christ. Curiosity was the Governor's motive; but the apostle, who knew his character, was faithful to him, and would not speak of the faith of Christ only, to one who could not understand it, but made a home application, by enlarging on righteousness, temperance, and the important consequences of a future judgement. These were fit topics to press upon an unjust and rapacious governor, who lived in adultery, Drusilla (his reputed wife) having forsaken a lawful husband to live with him. She was by birth a Jewess, daughter of the Herod whose death we have already mentioned; and having renounced her religion, and her husband, for Felix, was, by the judgement of God, given up to hardness of heart; so that it does not appear that the apostle's discourse made any impression upon her. It was otherwise with Felix, who, though a wicked man, had sinned against less light: He trembled at what he heard, and, not able to conceal his concern, he cut short the interview, with a promise to send for him again at a convenient



season : So great sometimes is the power of truth, when faithfully enforced ! With this only advantage on his side, Paul the prisoner triumphs over a haughty governor, and makes him tremble. Great likewise is the power of sin ! Felix trembled at the review of the past and the prospect of the future ; but he could not stop : he found some avocation for his present relief, and put off his most important concerns to a fitter opportunity, which it is probable never came. He saw and heard Paul afterwards ; but the same man had no more the same influence : the accompanying force of the Spirit was with-held ; and then he had no farther view in conversing with him, but the hope of receiving money for his enlargement. When the apostle had continued in this situation about two years, Felix was recalled from his government : He had governed the Jews with severity and injustice, and had reason to fear they would accuse him to the Emperor ; therefore, to ingratiate himself with them, he left Paul in his confinement, thinking that the detention of the person they hated might make them more readily excuse what was past ; or at least he durst not provoke them farther by releasing them.

A. D. 60.] When Festus, who succeeded Felix in the government, went up to Jerusalem (1), the high priest and elders applied to him, and requested that Paul might be sent thither to be tried before the council ; and they appointed proper instruments to assault and murder him in the journey. It seems they expected this favour would be easily granted, as it is usual for governors, at their first coming amongst a people, to do some popular act ; but Festus refused, and commanded them to follow him to Cæsarea, where he himself would judge

(1) Acts, xxv.



in the cause. The Jews accordingly exerted themselves in one more effort, and, when Festus was returned to Cæsarea, presented themselves before him on an appointed day; and Paul being brought into the court, they accused him heavily, as they had done before, and to as little effect, not being able to prove any thing against him, or to invalidate his protestation, that he had committed no offence, either against the law, or the temple, or the Roman government. Festus, who had refused to send him to Jerusalem before, was now willing to oblige them, perceiving the controversy was of a religious kind, and what he had little knowledge of; he therefore asked Paul, if he was willing to be tried, in his presence, before the council at Jerusalem. The apostle, who knew what treatment he might expect from the Jews, answered, That he was then at Cæsar's judgement-seat, where he ought to be tried, and that, if found guilty, he was not unwilling to suffer; but that, against the proposal of being delivered up to those who thirsted for his blood, he appealed to Cæsar. This was one privilege of a Roman citizen, that, when he thought himself aggrieved in an inferior court, he might, by entering such an appeal, put a stop to proceedings, and refer the cause to the immediate determination of the Emperor. From the example of St Paul, who counted not his life dear, but was willing, not only to be bound, but to die for the Lord Jesus, we learn, that it is very allowable for a Christian to avail himself of the laws and privileges of his country, when unjustly persecuted for righteousness sake; and perhaps, in some cases, it would be blameable to omit it. Civil liberty is a *depositum* with which we are entrusted for posterity, and, by all lawful means, should be carefully preserved. Festus, after having consulted with his council and lawyers upon this unexpected turn, admitted



admitted the appeal, and determined he should be sent to Rome. Paul had long had a desire to visit the believers in that city, and had formed some plans concerning it. But it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps. His way was now opened in a manner he had not thought of, but in such a manner as made it more evident, that his bonds proved to the furtherance of the gospel.

Soon after this, Agrippa, son of the late Herod, who had large territories, and the title of king, under the Romans, came, with his sister Bernice, to congratulate Festus upon his accession to his government : He was a man of a fair character, a professed Jew, but possessed of moderation and prudence. During their stay, Festus informed them of what had lately happened concerning Paul. The whole that he understood of the affair was, that he had not been guilty of any crime, but that his accusers had certain questions against him of their own superstitions, and concerning one Jesus, who was dead, and whom Paul affirmed to be alive. To him the life and the death of Jesus were points of equal indifference : not so to those who believe ; he died for them, and who expect that because he lives, they shall live also. This imperfect account made Agrippa desirous to hear Paul himself ; and accordingly the next day Agrippa, Bernice, and Festus, being seated in court \*, attended by their officers and train, and a number of the principal people, Paul was once more brought forth to speak in public for himself (1). On this occasion he addressed himself particularly to Agrippa ; and having expressed his

\* The apology St Paul made for himself was not his trial. He had already stopped all proceedings at law by his appeal to Cæsar ; nor was Festus then as a judge upon his tribunal.

(1) Acts, xxi.



satisfaction that he was permitted to speak before one who was so well acquainted with the laws and customs of the Jews, he related the cause of his present confinement: he professed his faith and hope in the scriptures; and then, as he had done before, he gave him an account of the extraordinary means by which he had been changed from a \* persecutor to a follower of Jesus, in his journey to Damascus: His defence therefore (as has been formerly observed) was rather experimental than argumentative, and made very different impressions upon his hearers. Festus, who seems to have had a good opinion of his sincerity and intention, yet, supposing no man in his sober senses could believe such a strange story, interrupted him in his narration, and with an air, rather of piety than indignation, said, "Paul, thou art beside thyself! much learning hath made thee mad †!" A similar judgement is passed by too many upon all who profess an acquaintance with the life of faith in an unseen Jesus; but ordinarily, now, the effect is not ascribed to the excess of learning, but to the want of it: as, on the other hand, a man who maintains the wildest absurdities, puts his judgement and understanding to little hazard in the world's esteem, if his chimeras are set off with

\* Speaking of his past conduct towards the disciples, he calls it *madness*, — being exceedingly, or (as we express it) *raging mad against them*. A man in this state will assault any person he meets; he waits for no provocation, listens to no entreaty, regards no consequences. Thus the apostle judged of himself when a persecutor of the church; and the spirit of persecution in every age has been the same. May God restore those to their right minds who are governed by it.

† His answer to Festus is expressed with much accuracy and precision. "I am not mad, most noble Festus! but speak forth (αποφθεγγμαι) the words of truth and soberness." Madness discovers itself either in the apprehension of a false object, or in the false apprehension of a true one. The things he spoke of were true in themselves, and his ideas of them just and proportionate.



a competent apparatus of literature. Agrippa, however, was differently affected, especially when Paul made a bold appeal to himself, concerning the notoriety of the facts which had lately happened, and the truth of the prophecies with which they were connected. Here the power of truth triumphed a gain, and Agrippa was so struck, that, without regarding the numerous assembly, or the displeasure such a declaration might give both to Jews and Romans, particularly to Festus, who had expressed his sentiment just before, he gave way to the emotions of his mind, and said aloud, "Almoſt thou perſuaदेſt me to be a Chriſtian." Yet this was but an involuntary conviction; it did honour to the apoſtle, but was of no benefit to himſelf. And the confeſſion which, at firſt view, ſeems to proceed from an ingenuous ſpirit, when cloſely examined, amounts but to this, that though Agrippa was, indeed, convinced of the truth, his heart was ſo attached to the preſent evil world, that he had neither courage nor will to follow it; as when we ſay of a picture, It looks almoſt alive, we do not mean, ſtrictly, that there is any more life in the painting, than in the canvafs on which it is drawn, but only that the reſemblance is ſtrong: ſo the almoſt Chriſtian, however ſpecious in his profeſſions, is ſtill deſtitute of that living principle which alone can enable him to make them good, and is, in reality, an utter ſtranger to true Chriſtianity. In the graceful return the apoſtle made to the King's acknowledgement, he hinted at this defect, wiſhing that both Agrippa, and all who heard him, were not only almoſt, but altogether, as he was himſelf, with an exception to the chains he wore for the cauſe of the goſpel. This answer diſcovers, in one view, the confidence he had in his cauſe, the happy frame of his mind, the engaging turn of his addreſs,



dress, and his unbounded benevolence: he could wish nothing better than what he himself felt, to his dearest friends, and he wished nothing worse to his greatest enemies; nay, he wished that his enemies might, if possible, experience all his comforts, without any of his trials. When Festus and Agrippa were withdrawn, they agreed, in their opinion, that he had done nothing deserving of death, or even of imprisonment, and that he might have been released, if he had not himself prevented it (1), by appealing to Cæsar.

In consequence of the determination to send him to Rome, he was committed to the custody of a centurion named *Julius*, with whom he embarked in a vessel that was on a trading voyage to several parts of the Lesser Asia. Aristarchus, and some other of his friends, went with him; and particularly the Evangelist Luke, who seems to have been the inseparable companion of his travels, from the first time he was at Troas. They touched the following day at Sidon, where the centurion gave him liberty to refresh himself, and visit his friends. At their next port, Myra in Lycia, a vessel offering which was bound directly for Italy, they went on board her. In the beginning of this passage they were retarded by contrary winds. At length they reached the island of Crete, (now called *Candia*); and having put into a port, called *the Fair-Havens*, Paul would have persuaded them to have staid there, intimating that, as the winter was now advancing, they would meet with many inconveniences and dangers, if they ventured to proceed any farther. Long voyages were seldom attempted, during the winter, in those days, or for many ages after, till the knowledge of the compass made way for those great improvements in navigation

(1) Acts, xxvii.

which



which now embolden the mariner to sail, indifferently, at any season of the year. But it is probable the apostle's precaution was not merely founded upon the obvious disadvantages of the season, but rather upon an extraordinary pre-intimation of what was soon to happen. But his remonstrance was over-ruled, the centurion preferring the judgement of the master of the ship, who thought it best, if possible, to reach another haven at the west end of the island, which was thought to be more commodious and safe than the place Paul proposed. A favourable wind springing up from the south, determined their resolves, and they set sail with a good confidence of soon reaching their desired port.

There is little doubt but Paul's case and character had by this time engaged the notice of many of his fellow-passengers in the ship. Upon a superficial inquiry, they would learn, that he was the follower of one Jesus, who had been crucified; that he was esteemed a setter-forth of strange gods, and charged with having disturbed the public peace wherever he came. He probably took frequent occasions to speak of his Lord and Master to those about him; and as he had several companions, the manner of their social worship could hardly pass unobserved; but no emergency had as yet occurred to manifest the solidity and force of his principles to full advantage, and to make it evident to all with whom he sailed, that his God was far unlike the idols of the Heathens; and that the religion which prompted him to do and suffer so much for the sake of Jesus, was founded, not in the imaginations and inventions of men, but in reality and truth. In prosperous circumstances, most people are easily satisfied with their own principles, and are ready to take it for granted, that even the notions received from no better source than tradition

or



or custom, cannot be wrong, or at least will not be dangerous; but it is in a season of common distress that the truth and efficacy of vital religion appear with the most incontestible authority. The God who alone can deliver when all hope of safety is taken away, and the religion which can inspire a man with confidence and peace, when there is nothing but dismay and confusion around him, will then extort some acknowledgement even from those who had before thought of them with indifference. From these considerations, we may collect one general reason why the Lord, who, by his divine providence, adjusts the time and circumstances of every event, and without whose permission not a sparrow can fall to the ground, permits his faithful people to be so often exercised with severe trials: it is, to manifest that their hopes are well grounded; that they have not taken up with words and notions, but have a real and sure support, and can hope and rejoice in God under those pressures which deprive others of all their patience, and all their courage; and, on the other hand, to evince that his power and faithfulness are surely engaged on their behalf; that he puts an honour upon their prayers, is near to help them in the time of trouble, and can deliver them out of their greatest extremities. We are not then to wonder, that this favoured servant of the Lord, after having endured so many sufferings and hardships upon the land, was exposed, in the course of this voyage, to equal dangers and difficulties upon the sea; for they had not long quitted their last port, before their hopes of gaining a better were blasted: they were overtaken by a sudden and violent storm. The name given it by the historian, *Eureclydon*, expresses its direction to have been from the eastern quarter, and its energy upon the waves. The tempest irresistibly overpowered the mariners, and rendered



dered their art impracticable and vain : they were compelled to abandon the ship to the direction of the wind, and were hurried away they knew not where. Mention is made of the difficulty they had to secure the ship's boat, as the only probable means of escaping, if they should be wrecked, which yet, in the event, was wholly useless to them ; likewise of their endeavours to strengthen the ship by girding her with ropes, and of their throwing a considerable part of the lading and tackling into the sea. In this distressed situation, expecting every hour to be either swallowed up by the waves, or dashed to pieces against unknown rocks or shores, they continued fourteen days. When they were almost worn out with hardship and anxiety, and there was no human probability of deliverance, the Lord manifested the care he had of his servants. The seamen had not seen sun or stars for many days ; but his eye had been upon Paul and his companions every moment. No one on board could even conjecture into what part of the sea the ship was driven ; but the Lord knew, and his angels knew ; and now one was commanded to appear, to comfort the apostle, and to give him a word of comfort for all on board. Upon this he addressed the people in the ship, exhorting them to take some food, and to be of good courage ; for that the God to whom he belonged, and whom he served, had given him assurance, by an angel, not only of his own safety, but that the lives of all on board should be preserved for his sake ; that the ship would be cast upon a certain island ; but he fully relied on the promise, that not one of them should be lost. He had been told, that he must stand before Cæsar : which was a sufficient earnest of his preservation ; for who, or what, can disappoint the purpose of God ? Amidst all these threatening appearances, Paul was, in reality, as  
safe



safe in the storm as Cæsar could be thought upon the throne. And thus all his servants are inviolably preserved by his watchful providence; so that neither elements nor enemies can hurt them, till the work he has appointed them is accomplished.

At length the seamen perceived indications that they were drawing near to land; and when they were driven into a convenient depth of water, they cast anchor, and waited for the approach of day. In this interval the people were encouraged by Paul's advice and example, to eat a hearty meal, by which their strength and spirits were recruited to sustain the fatigue they were yet to undergo. In the morning they saw an island; but knew it not. The mariners, regarding their own safety only, were about to make their escape in the boat; but Paul, informing the soldiers that they could not be saved unless the seamen remained in the ship, they paid so much regard to his judgement as immediately to cut the ropes by which the boat was fastened, and give her up to the sea.

Their only remaining resource was, to force the ship upon the shore, in a place where landing would be most practicable; and of this the mariners were the most proper judges. If this island, as is generally supposed, was that which we now call *Malta*, we know that it is almost environed with rocks. They having therefore discovered an open bay, with a beach of sand or pebbles \*, endeavoured to

\* "They discovered a certain creek, with a shore." But there was a shore all round the island. *Αιγιαλος* does not express the sea-coast in general, or a rocky craggy shore, but the skirts of an open bay, convenient for launching, landing, or drawing a net for fish. See *Matth. xiii. 2. 48. John, xxi. 4.* A mariner who understood Greek would perhaps render the sentence thus: "They observed a certain bay, with a beach." And this they chose as the most likely place to get safe to land.



run the ship there; but had the management of this business been left to the soldiers and passengers, who were unexperienced in sea-affairs, they might probably have let her drive at random against the rocks, where an escape would, humanly speaking, have been impossible. In this view, we may observe, that the apostle's firm confidence in the promise he had received was connected with a prudent attention to the means in their power, from which the promise received was so far from dispensing them, that it was their chief encouragement to be diligent in employing them. This incident may be applied to points of more general importance; and, if carefully attended to, might have determined or prevented many unnecessary and perplexing disputes concerning the divine decrees, and their influence on the contingencies of human life. What God has appointed shall surely come to pass; but in such a manner, that all the means and secondary causes, by which he has determined to fulfil his designs, shall have their proper place and subserviency. Accordingly they made the best of their way to the shore; but before they quite reached it, the ship was stopped by a point or bank \*, where her fore part stuck fast, and remained immoveable; but the stern, or hinder part, was presently broken by the violence of the surges. In the general confusion, the soldiers, unmindful how much they were indebted to Paul, proposed that all the prisoners should be killed without distinction, lest they should be accountable if any of them escaped; but the centurion, who

\* Τοπον διβαλασσαν is rendered, in our version, *a place where two seas met*; but there is nothing answerable to the word *met*. Probably it means what the mariners call a spit or point of sand running off from the shore, and which had had a sufficient depth of water on either side.

interested



interested himself in his preservation, rejected the motion, and commanded every one to do what they could for their own safety. Many who could swim cast themselves into the sea; the rest availed themselves of planks and broken pieces of the ship; and the merciful providence of the Lord gave their endeavours success: so that the whole company, consisting of two hundred and seventy-six persons, came safe to land.

The inhabitants, though called barbarians, received and accommodated them with great humanity, and manifested a tenderness too rarely found upon such occasions amongst those who bear the name of Christians; they brought them under cover, and kindled fires to warm and dry them. The apostle, who cheerfully suited himself to all circumstances, assisted in supplying the fire with fuel; but having gathered a parcel of sticks, a viper, which was unperceived in the midst of them, fastened itself upon his hand. He had just escaped from storm and shipwreck, and was exposed to as great a danger of another kind. Such is the nature of our present state; and it is a proof of our pride and ignorance, that we are seldom greatly apprehensive for ourselves, but when some formidable appearance is before our eyes. A tempest, pestilence, or earthquake, alarms us, and not without reason; but, alas! we are not such mighty creatures as to have nothing to fear but from such powerful agents: a tyle, a fly, a hair, or a grain of sand, are sufficient instruments, in the hand of God, to remove a king from the throne to the grave, or to cut off the conqueror at the head of his victorious armies. On the other hand, those who serve the Lord, and trust in him, are equally safe under all events; neither storms, nor flood, nor flames, nor the many unthought-of evils which lurk around in the smoothest scenes of life, have

Q 3 permission.



permission to hurt them till their race is finished; and then it little signifies by what means they are removed into their master's joy. The apostle, in the strength of divine faith, shook off the venomous creature into the fire, and remained unmoved and unhurt. The islanders, who saw what had passed, judged at first, (from those faint apprehensions of a superior power inflicting punishment on the wicked, which seem to remain in the darkest and most ignorant nations), that he was certainly a murderer, who, though he had escaped the seas, was pursued by vengeance, and marked out for destruction; but when, after expecting for some time to see him drop down dead, they found that he had received no harm, they retracted their censure, and conceived him to be a god, or something more than man. This event probably prepared them to hear him with attention.

The apostle and his friends were courteously entertained three days by Publius, the chief person of the island, who resided near the place of their landing: he requited the kindness of his host, by restoring to health his father, who had been some time ill of a fever and dysentery. In the same manner he laid his hands on many sick persons, who were healed in answer to his prayers. These acceptable services procured him much favour from the inhabitants; and when, after three months stay, he was about to depart, they furnished him liberally with necessary provisions for his voyage.

A. D. 61.] They sailed from thence in a ship of Alexandria that had wintered in the island; and stopping three days at Syracuse in Sicily, soon after arrived at Rhegium, and from thence, in two days, at Puteoli, near Naples, where they disembarked, and continued a week, at the request of the Christians of the place. From Puteoli to Rome their



their journey lay about one hundred miles by land.

The disciples at Rome having heard of Paul's approach, several of them met him at a place called *Appii Forum*, and another party at the Three Taverns; the former place being about fifty, and the other thirty miles from the city. At the sight of these believers, whom he had loved unseen, we are told he thanked God, and took courage. Even the Apostle Paul, though habitually flaming with zeal and love, was not always in the same frame. We learn from his own account of himself, that he had sometimes sharp exercises of mind; and perhaps this was such a time when his thoughts were much engaged on what awaited him upon his arrival at Rome, and his appearance before the cruel and capricious Nero. The Lord has so constituted his body, the church, that the different members are needful and helpful to each other; and the stronger are often indebted to the weaker. St Paul himself was revived and animated at this juncture by the sight of those who were in every respect inferior to him: it rejoiced him to see that Christ his Lord was worshipped at Rome also; and being in the presence of those with whom he could open his mind, and freely confer upon the glorious truths that filled his heart, he forgot at once the fatigue he had lately suffered, and the future difficulties he had reason to expect.

Upon their arrival at Rome, the centurion delivered up the prisoners to the proper officer; but Paul had the favour allowed him to live in a house which he hired, under the guard of one soldier. Here he immediately discovered his usual activity of spirit in his Master's cause; and, without losing time, sent on the third day for the principal persons of the Jews, (according to his general



general custom of making the first declarations of the gospel to them), and acquainted them with the cause of his prosecution and appeal: he assured them, that he had no intention, in vindicating himself, to lay any thing to the charge of his own people; adding, that, not for any singularities of his own, or for any offence against the law of Moses, but for the hope of Israel, he was bound with \* the chain he then wore. They answered, that they had received no information concerning him from Judea; but that they understood the sect to which he professed an attachment was every where spoken against: they therefore desired to hear his sentiments, and appointed a day for the purpose, when many of them came to him, and he spent the whole day, from morning till evening, in proving, confirming, and explaining, the nature and necessity of the gospel and kingdom of Christ, from the books of Moses and the Prophets. His discourse had good effect upon some, but others believed not, and they departed with considerable disagreement among themselves; the apostle taking leave of them with that solemn warning, which our Lord had often used in the course of his ministry, from the prophecy of Isaiah (1), denouncing incurable and judicial blindness and hardness of heart upon those who wilfully rejected the proposal of the truth.

He remained a prisoner in his own hired house for the space of two years, having an unrestrained liberty to receive all who came to him, and to

\* Among the Romans, the prisoner was always chained to the soldier or soldiers who guarded him. St Paul speaks of his chain both to friends and enemies, with an indifference that shews how well content he was to wear it for his Master's sake. See Ephes. vi. 20; 2 Tim. i. 16.

(1) Is. vi. 9. 10.



preach the glad tidings of salvation by Christ; which, we learn from his epistles (1), he did with so much success, that his imprisonment evidently contributed to the furtherance of the gospel, enlarged the number of believers, and animated the zeal and confidence of those who had already received faith and grace.

A. D. 63.] The history of St Luke ends here, which I have followed more closely than I at first designed, partly because the facts he has recorded suggest many reflections which have more or less a reference to our main design, and partly from a reluctance to leave the only sure and incontestible history by which our researches into the establishment and state of the primitive church can be guided; for though some monuments of the early ages of Christianity, which are still extant, have a great share of merit, and will afford us materials to make good our plan, yet they must be selected with caution; for it would be a want of ingenuousness not to acknowledge, that there are great mixtures and blemishes to be found in the writings of those who lived nearest to the apostles times: and in the most ancient historical remains several things have a place, which shew, that a spirit of credulity and superstition had very early and extensive influence; the evident traces of which have given too fair an occasion to some persons of more learning than candour, to attempt to bring the whole of those records into disrepute. But where the characteristic genius and native tendency of the gospel are rightly understood, and carefully attended to, a mind, not under the power of bias and prejudice, will be furnished with sufficient data, whereby to distinguish what is genuine and

(1) Philip. i. 12.

worthy.



worthy of credit from the spurious and uncertain additions which have been incautiously received.

I shall be brief in deducing our history from this period to the close of the first century. St Paul, after more than two years confinement at Rome, having not yet finished his appointed measure of service, was providentially preserved from the designs of all his enemies, and set at liberty. We are told by some, that, in pursuance of the design he had long before expressed, he went into Spain, and from thence to Gaul, now called *France*: nor have endeavours been wanting to prove, that he preached the gospel even in the British isles. That he, at some time, accomplished his desire of visiting Spain, is not improbable; but we have no certain evidence that he did so: much less is there any ground for supposing that he was either in France or Britain. From his own writings, however, we have good reason to believe, that, upon his dismissal from Rome, he revisited the churches of Syria, and some other parts of Asia; for, in his epistle to the Hebrews, he mentions his purpose of seeing *them*, in company with his beloved Timothy; and writing to Philemon, who lived at Colosse, he requests him to prepare him a lodging, for that he hoped to be with him shortly. And it was probably in this progress that he preached in Crete, and committed the churches he gathered there to the care of Titus; for we have no account in the Acts of his having visited that island before, except the little time he touched there in his passage to Rome, which seems not to have been sufficient for so great a work. How he was employed afterwards we know not; but it is generally agreed, that, towards the latter part of Nero's reign, he returned to Rome, and there received the crown of martyrdom.

In the accounts preserved of the rest of the apostles,



postles, we likewise meet with great uncertainty; nor can any thing be determined to satisfaction, concerning either the feat of their labours, or the time or manner of their deaths. I shall therefore wave a particular detail of what is not supported by sufficient proof: I only observe, concerning St Peter, that the assertion of his having been bishop of Rome, on which (and not on the true rock) the whole system of the Papacy is built, is not only inconsistent with what is recorded of him in the Acts, and the silence of St Paul concerning him, in the epistles he wrote from thence, — but is so far without foundation in ecclesiastical history, that it still remains a point of dubious controversy, whether he ever saw Rome in his life: if he did, it was probably towards the close of it; and the most received opinion is, that he suffered martyrdom there at the same time with St Paul; that Peter was crucified, and that Paul had the favour of being beheaded, in consideration that he was a Roman citizen.

The Christians, though generally despised, and often insulted for their profession, had not hitherto been subject to a direct and capital persecution; but Nero, who, intoxicated with power, had, in a few years, arrived at a pitch of wickedness and cruelty till then unheard of, at length directed his rage against the servants of Christ.

A. D. 64.] In his tenth year the city of Rome was set on fire, and a very considerable part of it consumed. This calamity was generally imputed to him, as the author, and it seems not without justice. Mischief, and the misery of others, were the study of his life; and he is reported to have expressed great pleasure at the spectacle, and to have sung the burning of Troy while Rome was in flames. Though he afterwards did many popular things, and spared no expence in relieving the  
people,



people, and rebuilding the city, he could not clear himself from the suspicion of the fact, any other-wise than by charging it upon the Christians. The Heathen historian Tacitus, in his account of this event, enables us so well to judge of the character which the Christians bore in his time, that I shall subjoin a translation of it for the information of the unlearned.

“ But neither the Emperor’s donations, nor the atonements offered to the gods, could remove the scandal of this report; but it was still believed, that the city had been burnt by his instigation. Nero, therefore, to put a stop to the rumour, charged the fact, and inflicted the severest punishments for it upon the Christians, as they were commonly called *A people detestable for their crimes*. The author of this sect was Christ; who, in the reign of Tiberius, was put to death by Pontius Pilate. The destructive superstition which was by this means suppressed for the present, soon broke out again, and not only overspread Judea, where it first arose, but reached even to Rome, where all abominations, from every quarter, are sure to meet and to find acceptance. Some who confessed themselves Christians were first apprehended, and a vast multitude afterwards, upon their impeachment, who were condemned, not so much for burning the city, as for being the objects of universal hatred. Their sufferings and torments were heightened by mockery and derision. Some were inclosed in the skins of wild beasts, that they might be torn in pieces by dogs; others were crucified; and others, being covered with inflammable matter, were lighted up as torches at the close of day. These spectacles were exhibited in Nero’s gardens, where he held a kind of Circensian shew, either mixing with the populace in the habit of a charioteer, or himself contending in the race. Hence  
it



it came to pass, that criminal and undeserving of mercy as they were, yet they were pitied, as being destroyed merely to gratify his savage and cruel disposition, and not with any view to the public good."

From this quotation it appears, that the Christians were considered by the Heathens as a sect that had been almost crushed by the death of their Master, but suddenly recovered strength, and spread far and near soon afterwards; that they were so extremely odious, on account of the supposed absurdity and wickedness of their principles, as to be thought capable of committing the worst crimes, when no sufficient proof could be found of their having committed any; that they were treated as the professed enemies of mankind; and, therefore, upon the first occasion that offered, were promiscuously destroyed with the most unrelenting cruelty; that they did not suffer as common malefactors; who, when under the actual punishment of their crimes, are usually beheld with some commiseration; but that insult and derision were added to the most exquisite inventions of torture; and, lastly, that if these violent proceedings were blamed by any, it proceeded rather from the hatred they bore to Nero, than from a suspicion that the Christians met with any thing more than their just desert. These things are carefully to be observed, if we would form a right judgement of the primitive church. It is possible many persons suppose, that St Paul's epistles to the Romans, Corinthians, and Ephesians, were (like the pastoral letters of bishops in our own times) addressed to the bulk of the inhabitants in those places; but the case was far otherwise. The Romans, to whom St Paul wrote, were inconsiderable for their number, most of them contemptible in the sight of the world on account of their poverty and low rank in life, and



(as the above extract from Tacitus proves) the objects of public detestation, for their attachment to the name and doctrines of Jesus.

Whether this persecution was confined to Rome, or carried on by public authority through all the provinces where Christians were to be found, is not absolutely certain, though the latter seems most probable; for it is hardly to be supposed, that Nero would rage against them in the capital, and suffer them to live in peace every where else. Tertullian expressly asserts, that Nero enjoined their destruction by public edicts in the several provinces; and his testimony seems worthy of credit, as he mentions it in his apology, which, though written more than a century afterwards, was not at so great a distance of time but he might easily have been contradicted, if he had advanced an untruth. Besides, the example of Nero, without his express injunctions, seems to have been sufficient to awaken persecution against a people so generally hated as the Christians were. Multitudes upon this occasion had the honour to seal their profession with their blood; but the cause for which they suffered triumphed over all opposition, and the martyrs places in the church were supplied by an accession of fresh converts.

This storm, though sharp, was not of very long continuance: it terminated with the life of Nero, who was compelled, though with extreme reluctance, to destroy himself with his own hands, that he might escape the most ignominious punishment; he having been, by a decree of the senate, justly and solemnly branded with the character which malice and ignorance would have fixed upon the Christian name, and condemned to be whipped to death as an enemy of the human race.

A. D. 68. 69.] After him, Galba, Otho, and Vitellius, were successively acknowledged Emperors;



rors ; but their reigns were short, and their deaths violent. The Jewish war, which ended in the final catastrophe and dispersion of that nation, was at this time carried on under the command of Vespasian, who, while engaged in that service, was saluted Emperor by his army.

A. D. 70.] Upon this, leaving the conduct of the war to his son Titus, he returned to Italy ; and, soon after the death of Vitellius, was peaceably established in the government. Titus having a secret commission from God (whom he knew not) to execute his fierce displeasure against the Jews, upon whom wrath was now come to the uttermost, after destroying the whole country of Judea with fire and sword, laid siege to Jerusalem ; and having taken it at the end of five months, with an incredible slaughter of the Jews, and the destruction of the temple, he burnt the city, and pulled down the very walls. More than a million of people, who had trusted in lying words, and boasted themselves of an empty profession, perished in this war ; and those who survived were reduced to slavery, sold, and dispersed into all parts, at the will of the conquerors. Thus ended the Jewish economy ; and the law of Moses having received the accomplishment of all its types, ceremonies, and precepts, in the person, life, and death of Jesus the Messiah, was irrevocably abrogated as to its observance, which was rendered utterly impracticable, by the destruction of the temple, and the cessation of the priesthood.

A. D. 79.] Under Vespasian, and Titus who succeeded him, the Christian church enjoyed considerable peace and liberty, though, upon many occasions, they suffered from the ill-will of their adversaries. Few, however, were put to death publicly and professedly for their religion, till Domitian, who came to the empire after his brother

R. 2

Titus,



Titus, [A. D. 81.], and who too much resembled Nero in his temper and conduct, imitated him likewise in employing his power against the followers of Christ. [A. D. 94.]. Several are mentioned in history who suffered in his time; but as little of moment, or that can be fully depended on, is recorded concerning them, I wave a recital of bare names. It is generally believed, that St John was banished to the isle of Patmos by this Emperor, where he wrote his epistles to the churches of Asia, and the revelation of future events which he had received from the Lord. Some there are who place these events much earlier, under the reign of Claudius; but the former opinion seems most probable, and best supported by the testimony of the ancients. But the story of his having been cast into a cauldron of boiling oil, in the presence (as some add) of the Roman senate, does not seem supported by any tolerable evidence. It is believed that he gained his liberty from banishment, and returned to Ephesus, or the neighbouring parts; that he afterwards wrote his gospel a little before his death, which is supposed to have happened about the last year of the century. If so, he was probably about an hundred years of age, and survived the rest of the apostles a considerable space.

Domitian, having made the earth groan under his cruelties and excesses, was assassinated in the sixteenth year of his reign. [A. D. 96.] Nerva succeeded, (a man of much fairer character), who repealed the sanguinary edicts of his predecessor; and it does not appear that the Christians were generally persecuted during his short government. Before his death (for he did not live two years) he adopted Trajan for his successor, who came to the empire [A. D. 98.] with a general approbation, and is still reputed one of the best and wisest princes that Rome was favoured with. From his conduct,  
and



and that of some of the following Emperors, it appeared, that the gospel of Christ was not only hated by such persons as Nero and Domitian, who seemed professed enemies to every thing that was good and praise worthy, but that men who desired to be thought the patrons of virtue, and to act upon the most benevolent principles, had objections equally strong against it; for if Trajan did not issue edicts expressly against the Christians, there was a very sharp persecution carried on against them in his reign; and when Pliny (in an epistle still extant) represented to him the greatness of their sufferings, and the multitude and innocence of the sufferers, the Emperor interposed no farther by his answer, than to forbid informations against them, upon suspicion, to be encouraged, but directed, that such as were proved to be Christians, and refused to join in the Heathen sacrifices, should suffer death: and when he visited Asia, Ignatius, who was Bishop of Antioch, being brought before him, he condemned him, with his own mouth, to be sent to Rome to be devoured by wild beasts. But we shall resume the account of what happened under his reign hereafter, his second or third year [A. D. 100.] coinciding, according to the generally-received computation, with the end of the first century, which I have fixed as the limit of our researches in the present volume.

But before I conclude the chapter, it may be useful to inquire, what might be the motives which influenced the Heathens so eagerly to embrace every occasion of shewing their displeasure against the professors of Christianity.

The original and proper cause of the injurious treatment the first Christians met with from the Heathens, and particularly from the Roman government, which usually tolerated every kind of religious worship that did not interfere with the

R. 3.

public.



public tranquillity and the obedience due to the state, was one that is of an abiding and universal influence, namely, that enmity of the carnal heart, which cannot be brought to submit to the wisdom and will of God. This has been the secret source of all the persecution which has been the lot of the true disciples of Christ in every age. The sublime doctrines of the gospel were offensive to the pretended wisdom of men, and the spirituality of its precepts no less thwarted their passions. Men, *if only left to themselves*, cannot but oppose a system, which, at the same time that it reduces all their boasted distinctions of character to a perfect level, in point of acceptance with God, enjoins a life and conversation absolutely inconsistent with the customs and pursuits which universally prevail, and brands many of the most allowed and authorised practices with the hard names of *wickedness* and *folly*. But they are not left to themselves, but are, in a degree they are little aware of, under the influence of Satan, who, for the power he maintains and exerts over them, is styled in scripture, *The God of this World*. Since their own evil dispositions are thus instigated by the great enemy of God and goodness, it is entirely owing to the powerful restraints of the providence of the Most High, that his servants can, at any time, or in any place, enjoy an interval of rest: and though he has always made good his promise in favour of his church, that the gates of hell shall not prevail against it; though they who oppose it, successively perish, and leave their schemes unfinished, while the interest against which they rage triumphs over all their attacks, and subsists, revives, and flourishes, amidst the changes which sweep away almost the remembrance of the most prosperous human establishments;—yet he is pleased, for wise reasons, to permit them to try what they can do. Hereby the  
faith



faith and patience of his people are strengthened and displayed, his care over them illustrated, and those who are sincerely devoted to him are evidently distinguished from hypocrites and pretenders, who join in an outward attachment to his gospel in times of prosperity, but are presently wearied and disgusted when storms and troubles arise.

Amongst the more particular reasons why Christianity was obnoxious to the Heathens, not only to persons of vile character, as Nero, but to such as Trajan and Marcus Aurelius, who are, even to this day, highly extolled for their probity and discernment, we may mention these that follow: and more than one of them may be easily accommodated to similar events, which stand upon the records of history down to our own times; and their effects will probably be felt by many who are yet unborn.

1. The doctrine of the cross perhaps was, and always will be, the capital offence. The Christians professed to place all their hopes on the actions and sufferings of One, who died, to all appearance, like a common malefactor. This, considered in one view, was thought such a kind and degree of infatuation, as provoked the most sovereign and universal contempt; and, in another view, it raised a grave concern for the interests of morality and virtue, in those whose pride was flattered by their own empty declamations on those sounding topics. Every thing that was evil, they thought, might be expected from men who openly declared, that they hoped for eternal happiness, not for their own works, which in this connection they depreciated and renounced, but on account of the righteousness and mediation of another. If it was possible that Christians could maintain that course of conduct which the gospel requires, and, at the same time, conceal the principles and motives on which they



they act, they might perhaps come off more easily with the world ; for the justice, temperance, goodness, and truth, which become their high calling, are suited to conciliate peace with all men. But their principles must not, cannot be concealed. Those who know and love Jesus, and are sensible of their immense obligations to him, will glory in him, and in him only ; they will avow, that it is not by their own power or holiness that they escape the pollutions of the world, but that they derive all their strength from faith in his blood, and from the supports of his grace. They dare not conceal this, nor do they desire it, though they are sensible that the world, whether it bears the name of Heathen or Christian, will hate and despise them for it.

2. The Romans, though attached to their old system of idolatry, were not averse to the admission of new divinities, upon the ground of what a modern writer calls a *spirit of intercommunity* ; that is, every one had liberty to adopt what worship he pleased, provided due honour was given to the ancient establishments. The votaries of the Ægyptian, Roman, and Syrian deities, while they paid some peculiar regard to their own favourites, indulged each other in a mutual acknowledgement of the rest : but the religion of Jesus was absolutely incompatible with them all, would admit of no competition ; and his followers could not avoid declaring, upon all occasions, that they were no gods that were made with hands. On this account they were considered as a most uncharitable, proud, and narrow-hearted sect, as the Jews, for the same reason, had been before them. And thus it will always be. — Nothing will more effectually secure a man in the peaceful possession of his own errors, than his pleading for the indifference of error in general, and allowing those who most widely differ

fer



fer from him to be all right in their own way; and this lukewarm comprehension, which is a principal part of that pretended candour and charity for which our own times are so remarkable, preserves a sort of intercourse or confederacy amongst multitudes, who are hardly agreed in any one thing but their joint opposition to the spirit and design of the gospel. But they who love the truth cannot but declare against every deviation from it; they are obliged to decline the proposed intercommunity, and to vindicate the commands and institutions of God from the inventions and traditions of men; they not only build for themselves upon the foundation which God has laid in Zion, but they are free to profess their belief, that other foundation can no man lay; that there is no other name given under heaven by which a sinner can be saved; and that none can have an interest in this name but by that faith which purifies the heart, works by love, and overcomes the world: therefore they always have been, and always will be hated, as uncharitable and censorious, and are sure to be treated accordingly, so far as opportunity and circumstances will permit those who think themselves aggrieved to discover their resentment.

3. The wisest and most respectable characters among the Heathen rulers, either for reasons of state, or from their own superstition, were generally the most solicitous to preserve the old religion from innovations. The history of mankind furnishes us with frequent proofs, that persons, in other respects of the greatest penetration and genius, have often been as blindly devoted to the absurdities of a false religion as the weakest among the vulgar; or if they have seen the folly of many things that have the sanction of antiquity and custom; yet the maxims of a false policy, and that supposed connection and alliance between the established



blished religion and the welfare of the state, which has been instilled into them from their infancy, induce them to think it their interest, if not their duty, to keep up the same exterior, and to leave things as they found them. Trajan seems to have been influenced by these considerations : he was zealous for the Heathen system, in which he had been educated, and regarded it, as the Romans were accustomed to do, as the basis, or at least the chief security, of the government. The Christians, therefore, were to be punished, not only for their obstinacy in maintaining their own opinions, but as being eventually enemies to the state : for though their conduct was peaceable, and they paid a cheerful obedience to laws and governors, while they did not interfere with that obedience they owed to Christ, their supreme Lord ; yet their doctrines, which struck at the very root of idolatry, made them accounted dangerous to society, and deserving to be exterminated from it.

4. These suspicions were strengthened by the great success and spread the gospel obtained in this first century : within the compass of a few years, it had extended to almost every part of the Roman empire. In this view it appeared formidable, and called for a speedy and vigorous suppression before it should become quite insuperable, by the accession of fresh strength and numbers. But the event did not answer their expectation : believers grew and multiplied, in defiance of all the cruelties exercised upon them ; the numbers and constancy of the sufferers, and the gentle spirit of meekness, forgiveness, and love, which they discovered, often made lasting impressions upon the people, sometimes upon their tormentors and judges ; and, by the blessing of God upon their doctrine, thus powerfully recommended by their conduct, and sealed by their  
their



their blood, new converts were continually added to the church.

5. When it was thus determined to extirpate, if possible, these odious and dangerous people, pretexts and occasions were always ready; slanderous reports, concerning their tenets and assemblies, were industriously promoted, and willingly believed. Some of these took their rise from misapprehension; some were probably invented by those who apostatized from the church, who, to justify themselves, as well as to evince their sincerity, pretended to make discoveries of horrid evils that prevailed amongst them, under the disguise of religion. Many, who would not have invented such stories themselves, were, however, well pleased to circulate what they had heard, and took it for granted, that every thing was true; which confirmed the opinion they had before entertained of this pestilential and despicable sect. But neither violence nor calumny could prevail against the cause and people of God, and his Christ. They were supported by an almighty arm; and though many had the honour to lay down their lives in this glorious cause, many more were preserved, by his providence, in the most dangerous circumstances.

The gospel of Christ, though contradictory to the received opinions, laws, customs, and pursuits, of every place where it appeared, though unsupported either by arts or arms, though opposed by power and policy on every side, in a space of about sixty-six years from our Lord's ascension, according to the promise he gave his disciples, had spread successively from Jerusalem, through Judea and Samaria, even to the ends of the earth. Christians were to be found in every province where the Roman power ruled, and in most of their principal cities; and though not many noble, mighty, or  
wise,



wife, were called, yet some there were; and the power of the grace of Jesus was displayed in every rank of life. Courtiers, senators, and commanders, notwithstanding the difficulty of their situation, were not ashamed of his cross; and some of the learned obtained that peace and happiness, by embracing his gospel, which they had sought to no purpose in the vain intricacies of a false philosophy. Nor was the success of the gospel confined within the limits of the Roman empire, but extended eastward to Parthia and Babylon, where the Roman eagles were not acknowledged. We are not sure, however, that there were *many* collected societies of Christians in *every* province, or that those societies were in general very numerous. Those parts of Asia and Greece which had been the scene of St Paul's labours, seem to have had the greatest number of settled churches, in proportion to their extent; and their largest assemblies were probably in their principal cities, such as Antioch, Alexandria, and Rome. But we have reason to believe, from our Lord's own declarations, that real Christians, in the most flourishing times (1) of the church, have been very few, in comparison with the *many* who chose the broad and beaten road which leads to destruction: but these few are under his conduct and blessing, as the salt of the earth, and are therefore scattered far and wide, according to the disposal of his wise providence, who appoints the time of their birth, and the bounds of their habitation.

If by the epithet *primitive* we mean that period during which the professed churches of Christ preserved their faith and practice remarkably pure, and uninfluenced by the spirit and maxims of the world, we cannot extend it far beyond the first

(1) Matth. vii. 13. 14.

century.



century. We are sure that a mournful declension prevailed very early, and quickly spread, like a contagion, far and wide : and indeed the seeds of those evils which afterwards produced such a plentiful harvest of scandals and mischiefs were already sown, and began to spring up, while the apostles were yet living. And we shall shew hereafter, that the first and purest age of the church was not free from such blemishes as have been observable in all succeeding revivals of true religion. These things are to be guarded against with the utmost attention ; but they will more or less appear while human nature continues in its present state of infirmity. While the professors of Christianity were few in comparison of their opponents, while they were chiefly poor and obscure persons, and had sharp persecutions to grapple with, so long they preserved the integrity and purity of their profession in general ; and the disorders which appeared among them were faithfully and successfully opposed and corrected ; afflictions and sufferings kept them firmly united in a love to the truth, and to each other : but when they were favoured with intervals of peace, and the increase of numbers and riches seemed to give them a more fixed establishment in the world, they were soon corrupted ; and that beautiful simplicity which is the characteristic of genuine Christianity, was obscured by will-worship and vain reasonings. Amongst the multitudes who abandoned idolatry, and embraced the Christian faith, there were several who had borne the specious name of *philosophers*. Some of these, on the one hand, laboured to retain as many of their favourite sentiments as they could by any means reconcile to the views they had formed of the gospel ; and, on the other hand, they endeavoured, if possible, to accommodate the Christian scheme to the taste and prejudices of the times, in hopes

VOL. III. S thereby



thereby to make it more generally acceptable. Thus the doctrines of the scripture were adulterated by those within the church, and misrepresented to those without. Perhaps the first alterations of this kind were not attempted with a bad intention, or extended to the most important points; but the precedent was dangerous; for the progress of error, like that of sin, is from small beginnings to awful and unthought-of consequences. Gospel-truth, like a bank opposed to a torrent, must be preserved entire, to be useful; if a breach is once made, though it may seem at first to be small, none but He who says to the sea, Hitherto shalt thou come, but no farther, can set bounds to the threatening inundation that will quickly follow. In effect, a very considerable deviation from the plan of the apostles had taken place in the churches before the decease of some who had personally conversed with them.

We have no ecclesiastical book of this age extant worthy of notice, except that called, The First of the Two Epistles to the Corinthians, which are ascribed to Clement Bishop of Rome, who is supposed to be the Clement mentioned by St Paul, in his epistle to the Romans. This epistle is not unsuitable to the character of the time when it was written, and contains many useful things; yet it is not, as we have it, free from fault, and at the best deserves no higher commendation than as a pious well-meant performance: it stands first, both in point of time and merit, in the list of those writings which bear the name of the apostolical fathers; for the rest of them, if the genuine productions of the persons whose names they bear, were composed in the second century: for as to the epistle ascribed to Barnabas, St Paul's companion, those who are strangers to the arguments by which many learned men have demonstrated it to be spurious, may  
be



be convinced, only by reading it, if they are in any measure acquainted with the true spirit of the apostle's writings. We are indeed assured, that both the epistles of Clement, this which bears the name of Barnabas, several said to have been written by Ignatius, the authenticity of which has likewise been disputed, one by Polycarp, and the book called the *Shepherd of Hermas*, which is filled with visionary fables, were all in high esteem in the first ages of the church, were read in their public assemblies, and considered as little inferior to the canonical writings; which may be pleaded as one proof of what I have advanced concerning that declension of spiritual taste and discernment which soon prevailed: for I think I may venture to say, there are few, if any, of the Protestant churches, but have furnished authors whose writings (I mean the writings of some one author) have far surpassed all the apostolical fathers taken together; and that not only in point of method and accuracy, but in scriptural knowledge, solid judgement, and a just application of evangelical doctrine to the purposes of edification and obedience.

But though the first Christians were men subject to passions and infirmities, like ourselves, and were far from deserving or desiring that undistinguishing admiration, and implicit submission, to all their sentiments, which were paid them by the ignorance and superstition of after times; — yet they were eminent for faith, love, self-denial, and a just contempt of the world: multitudes of them cheerfully witnessed to the truth with their blood, and, by their steadfastness and patience under trials, and their harmony among themselves, often extorted honourable testimonies even from their opposers. Could they have transmitted their spirit, together with their name, to succeeding generations, the face of Ecclesiastical History would have



been very different from what it now bears; but, by degrees, the love of novelty, and the thirst of power, a relaxed attention to the precepts of Christ, and an undue regard to the names, authority, and pretensions of men, introduced those confusions, contentions, and enormities, which at length issued in an almost universal apostacy from that faith and course of practice which alone are worthy the name of Christianity. The prosecution of this subject, more especially with a view to the history of the favoured few who were preserved from the general contagion, and of the treatment they met with who had the courage to censure or withstand the abuses of the times they lived in, will be attempted in the following volumes \* of this work, if God, in whose hands our times are, is pleased to afford opportunity, and if the specimen presented to the public, in this volume, should so far meet the approbation of competent judges, as to encourage the author to proceed.

Some particulars which may conduce to render the state of the church in the first century more evident to the reader, as well as to give light into the true state of religion amongst ourselves, and which could not be well introduced in the course of our narration, without making too frequent and too long digressions, I have, for that reason, treated of separately in the chapters that follow.

\* See the Preface.



## C H A P. II.

*An essay on the character of St Paul, considered  
as an exemplar or pattern of a minister of Jesus  
Christ.*

THE success with which the first promulgation of the gospel was attended, is to be ultimately ascribed to the blessing and operation of the Holy Spirit; and the great means which the Spirit of God is pleased to accompany with an efficacious power upon the souls of men, is the subject-matter of the gospel itself. He concurs with no other doctrine but that of the scripture. The most laboured endeavours to produce a moral change of heart and conduct, will always prove ineffectual, unless accommodated to the principles of revelation, respecting the ruin of the human nature by sin, and the only possible method of its recovery by Jesus Christ.

And as the Holy Spirit bears witness to no other doctrine, so he ordinarily restrains his blessing to those ministers who have themselves experienced the power of the truths which they deliver to others. A man may be systematically right, and strenuous in the delivery and defence of orthodox notions; yet if he is not in some degree possessed of the dispositions and motives which become a minister of the New Testament, he will seldom be honoured with much success or acceptance: the want of that disinterested and dependent frame of mind which the gospel inculcates on all who profess it, will render his labours insignificant; for the Holy Spirit, on whose influence success entirely depends, will seldom co-operate with any

S 3

but



but those who are sincerely governed by his precepts.

A great stress therefore is laid, in the New Testament, upon the principles, tempers, and conduct, which ought to distinguish the men who have the honour to be entrusted with the important charge of preaching the gospel of Christ. To delineate their proper character, and to form their manners suitable to their high calling, is the principal scope of the epistles to Timothy and Titus : and when we consider what we read there, in connection with many passages to the same purpose, which occur occasionally in the inspired writings, we may well adopt the apostles words, "Who is sufficient for these things?" A Christian, even in private life, is exposed to innumerable snares and dangers, from his situation in an evil world, the power and subtlety of his spiritual enemies, and the influence of the body of sin in himself, which, though weakened and despoiled of dominion, is not yet destroyed. A minister of the gospel, besides these trials in common with other Christians, has many peculiar to himself : His services are more difficult, his temptations more various, his conduct more noticed ; many eyes are upon him,—some enviously watching for his halting, and some perhaps too readily proposing him as a pattern, and content to adopt whatever has the sanction of his example : if encouraged and acceptable, he is in danger of being greatly hurt by popularity, and the favour of friends ; if opposed and ill-treated, (and this he must expect in some instances if he is faithful), he is liable either to be surprised into anger and impatience, or to sink into dejection and fear. It is therefore a great encouragement to find from scripture, (and not from scripture only), how the grace of God has enabled others, in equal circumstances of danger and temptation, to rise superior



perior to all impediments, and to maintain such a course of conduct, that they stand proposed as proper patterns for our imitation, and call upon us to be followers of them, as they were of Christ.

Amongst these the character of St Paul shines with a superior lustre; he stands distinguished by the eminence of his knowledge, grace, labours, and success, as a noble and animating exemplar of a minister of Jesus Christ. And if it should be thought a digression from the design of an ecclesiastical history, to allot a few pages to the consideration of his principles, and the uniform tenor of his life, yet I hope the digression will not be unprofitable in itself, or judged unsuitable to my general plan; for I proposed, not to confine myself to a dry detail of facts, but to point out the genuine tendency of the gospel where it is truly received, and the spirit by which it is opposed, and to shew the impossibility of reviving practical godliness by any other means than those which were so signally successful in the first age of the church.

Was I to exhibit any recent character with these views, the exceptions of partiality and prejudice would not be so easily obviated; the merits of such a character, however commendable upon the whole, would be objected to, and the incidental infirmities and indiscretions of the person (for the best are not wholly free from blemish) would be studiously collected and exaggerated, as a sufficient contrast to all that could be said in his praise. But modesty forbids the same open dissingenuous treatment of one who was an apostle of Christ: besides, he lived and died long ago; and as some learned men have found, or pretended to find, a way to reconcile his writings with the prevailing taste of the times, he is commended in general terms, and claimed as a patron by all parties of  
the



the religious world; therefore I am warranted to take it for granted, that none who profess the name of Christians will be angry with me for attempting to place his spirit and conduct in as full a light as I can, or for proposing him as a proper criterion, whereby to judge of the merits and pretensions of all who account themselves ministers of Christ.

Many things worthy our notice and imitation have occurred concerning this apostle, whilst we were tracing that part of his history which St Luke has given us in the Acts; but I would now attempt a more exact delineation of his character, as it is farther exemplified in his own epistles, or may be illustrated from a review of what has been occasionally mentioned before.

We may observe much of the wisdom of God in disposing the circumstances in which his people are placed previous to their conversion: they only begin to know *him* when he is pleased to reveal himself to them by his grace; but he knew *them* long before; he determines the hour of their birth, their situation in life, and their earliest connections; he watches over their childhood and youth, and preserves them from innumerable evils and dangers into which their follies, while in a state of ignorance and sin, might plunge them; and he permits their inclinations to take such a course, that, when he is pleased to call them to the knowledge of his truth, many consequences of their past conduct, and the reflections they make upon them, may concur, upon the whole, in a subserviency to fit them for the services into which he designs to lead them afterwards. Thus he leads the blind by a way that they knew not, and often, for the manifestation of his wisdom, power, and grace, in bringing good out of evil, he, for a season, gives them up so far to the effects of their own depravity.



vity, that, in the judgement of men, none seem more unlikely to be the subjects of his grace, than some of those whom he has purposed not only to save from ruin, but to make instrumental to the salvation of others. I doubt not but some of my readers, who are acquainted with their own hearts, will easily apply this observation to themselves; but there are instances in which the contrast is so striking and strong, that it will be made for them by those who know them. It is, however, peculiarly exemplified in the case of St Paul: He was set apart from the womb, as he himself tells (1) us, to be a chosen instrument of preaching among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ. The frame of his heart, and the manner of his life, the profession he had made, and the services in which he was engaged before his conversion, were evidently suited to render him an unsuspected, as well as a zealous, witness to the truth and power of the gospel, after he had embraced it. The Lord's purpose was, to shew the insufficiency of all legal appointments and human attainments, the power of his grace in subduing the strongest prejudices, and the riches of his mercy in pardoning the most violent attempts against his gospel. We know not how this purpose could have been more effectually answered, in a single instance, than by making choice of our apostle, who had been possessed of every advantage that can be imagined exclusive of the gospel, and in consequence of these advantages had made the most pertinacious efforts to suppress it: He was born a Jew, bred up under Gamaliel, a chief of the Pharisees (2), the sect which professed the most peculiar attachment to the law of Moses: his conduct, before he became a Christian, was undoubtedly moral, if we

(1) Gal. i. 15.

(2) Phil. iii.

understand



understand morality in that lean and confined sense which it too frequently bears among ourselves, as signifying no more than an exemption from gross vices, together with a round of outward duties performed in a mercenary servile spirit, to soothe the conscience, and purchase the favour of God. While he was thus busied in observing the letter of the law, he tells us, He was alive,—that is, he pleased himself in his own attainments, doubted not of his ability to please God, and that his state was safe and good. Upon these principles (which act uniformly upon all who are governed by them) his heart was filled with enmity against the doctrines and people of Jesus, and his blinded conscience taught him, that it was his duty to oppose them. He was a willing witness at the death of Stephen (1), and, from a spectator, soon became a distinguished actor in the like tragedies. Such is the unavoidable gradation, in a state of nature, from bad to worse. The excess and effects of his rage are described by St Luke in very lively colours; and he often acknowledges it in his epistles: for though the Lord forgave him, he knew not how to forgive himself for having persecuted and wasted the church of God (2): He made havock of the disciples like a lion or a wolf amongst a flock of sheep, pressing into their houses, sparing none, not even women. Thus he was filled with the hateful spirit of persecution, which is undistinguishing and unrelenting. The mischiefs he could do in Jerusalem not being sufficient to gratify his insatiable cruelty and thirst of blood, he obtained (as has been formerly observed) a commission from the high priest to harass the disciples at Damascus. In this journey, when he was near the city, he was suddenly struck to the ground by the

(1) Acts, xxii. 20.

(2) Gal. i. 13.; 1 Cor. xv. 9.

voice



voice and appearance of the Lord Jesus. From that hour a memorable change took place in his heart and views, and having been baptized by Ananias, and received a free pardon of all his wickedness, with a commission to the apostolic office, he began to preach that faith which before he had so industriously laboured to destroy. In this new light we are now to consider him; and whatever may be reasonably expected from a sense of such a display of grace and mercy in his behalf, we shall find manifested in the subsequent course of his life. Happy are those who come the nearest to such an exemplary patron.

I. The characteristic excellence of St Paul, which was as the spring or source of every other grace, was the ardency of the supreme love he bore to his Lord and Saviour: it would not be easy to find many periods throughout his epistles which do not evidence the fulness of his heart in this respect: He seems delighted even with the sound of the name of Jesus, so that, regardless of the cold rules of studied composition, we find him repeating it ten times in the compass of ten successive verses (1). He was so struck with the just claim the Saviour had to every heart, that he accounted a want of love to him the highest pitch of ingratitude and wickedness, and deserving the utmost severity of wrath and ruin (2). When he was conscious, that, for his unwearied application to the service of the gospel, in defiance of the many dangers and deaths which awaited him in every place, he appeared to many as one beside himself, and transported beyond the bounds of sober reason, he thought it a sufficient apology to say, "The love of Christ constrains us (3);" we are content to

(1) 1 Cor. i. 1.—10.

(2) 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

(3) 2 Cor. v. 14.



be fools for his sake, to be despised so he may be honoured, to be nothing in ourselves, that he may be all in all : He had such a sense of the glorious invaluable excellence of the person of Christ, of his adorable condescension in taking the nature and curse of sinners upon himself, and his complete suitableness and sufficiency, as the wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption of his people, that he often seems at a loss for words answerable to the emotions of his heart ; and when he has exhausted the powers of language, and astonished his readers with his inimitable energy, he intimates a conviction of his inability to do justice to a subject, the height, and depth, and length, and breadth of which are too great for our feeble capacities to grasp. But besides these general views, he was particularly affected with the exceeding abundant love and grace of Christ to himself, when he reflected on the circumstances in which the Lord had found him, and the great things he had done for him. That he who had before been a persecutor, a blasphemer, and injurious, should be forgiven, accepted as a child of God, intrusted with the ministry of the gospel, and appointed to everlasting salvation, was indeed an instance of wonderful grace. So it appeared to himself ; and at the thought of it he often seems to forget his present subject, and breaks forth into inimitable digressions to the praise of him who had loved him, and given himself for him. Happily convinced of the tendency and efficacy of this principle in himself, he proposes it to others, instead of a thousand arguments, whenever he would inculcate the most unreserved obedience to the whole will of God, or stir up believers to a holy diligence in adorning the doctrine of their God and Saviour in all things ; and his exhortations to the conscientious discharge of the various





rious duties of relative life, are generally enforced by this grand motive. In a word, at all times, and in all places, the habitual and favourite subject that employed his thoughts, his tongue, and his pen, was the love of Christ.

Supported and animated by this love, he exerted himself to the utmost, in promoting the knowledge of him whom he loved, and bearing testimony to his power and grace; nothing could dishearten, or weary, or terrify, or bribe him from his duty: and this must and will be universally the leading principle of a faithful minister. Should a man possess the tongue of men and angels, the finest genius, and the most admired accomplishments, if he is not constrained and directed by the love of Christ, he will either do nothing, or nothing to the purpose; he will be unable to support either the frowns or the smiles of the world; his studies and endeavours will certainly be influenced by low and selfish views: interest, or a desire of applause, may stimulate him to shine as a scholar, a critic, or a philosopher; but till the love of Christ rules in his heart, he will neither have inclination nor power to exert himself for the glory of God, or the good of souls.

II. The inseparable effect, and one of the surest evidences of love to Christ, is a love to his people. Of this likewise our apostle exhibits an instructive and affecting example; the warmth and cordiality of his love to those who loved his Lord and Master, appear in every page of his writings; he so rejoiced in their prosperity, that, to hear of it at any time time, made him in a manner forget his own sorrows \*, when encompassed with troubles

on

\* 2 Cor. vii. 7. 13.; see likewise Phil. ii. 28. Which finely intimates his tenderness and affection. He was oppressed with  
Vol. III. T sorrow



on every side; and though, in many instances, he did not meet that grateful return he had reason to expect, yet he could not be discouraged: but when he had occasion to expostulate with some upon this account, he adds, I will still gladly spend and be spent for you, though the more I love you the less I am loved (1). Of such a generous temper as this, the world, would they observe it, must acknowledge, (as the magicians in Egypt), This is the finger of God; for nothing but his grace can produce a conduct so contrary to the natural inclination of man, as to persevere and increase in kindness and affection to those who persevere in requiting it with coldness and ingratitude. His epistles to the Thessalonians abound in such expressions and strains of tenderness as would doubtless be generally admired, (especially by those who can read them in the original), were they not overlooked, through the unhappy disregard which too many shew to that best of books in which they are contained. When he is appealing to themselves concerning the sincerity of his conduct, and how far he had been from abusing his authority, he says, We were gentle among you, even as a nurse (or mother) cherisheth her children; — who, by her tender and assiduous offices, supplies their inability to take care of themselves (2). (It would be well if all who have aimed to derive a plenitude of power from the example of the apostles, were equally desirous to imitate him in the use of it).

sorrow upon sorrow: yet he felt more for the Philippians than for himself. He mourned over Epaphroditus, when sick, for their sakes; and sent him away for their comfort when recovered; and this he did as the most effectual means to lessen his own burden, by sympathising in that joy his friends would have in the interview, though he could not directly partake with them.

(1) 2 Cor. xii. 15.

(2) 1 Theff. ii. 7. 8.

He



He then adds, So, being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us. No comment can do justice to the spirit of this sentiment, or to the force of the expression in the Greek. In another passage, which is rendered in our version, *We being taken from you*, the original term (1) has an emphasis which no single word in our language can answer: it imports such a state of separation as is made between a parent and a child by the death of either, when the child is left a helpless and exposed orphan, or the parent is bereaved of the staff and comfort of his age; it beautifully intimates the endearing affection which subsisted between the apostle and the persons he was writing to; and demonstrates the greatest tenderness, simplicity, and condescension. But his regard went beyond words, and was evidenced by the whole course of his actions. Nor was it confined to those who had enjoyed the benefits of his personal ministry: his heart was charged with the care and welfare of all the churches; and those who had not seen his face in the flesh, had an unceasing share in his solicitude and prayers (2): nay, so strong was his love to the churches, that it balanced his habitual desire to be with Christ: he could not determine which was most eligible, to suffer with the members upon earth, (so that he might be serviceable to them), or to reign with the Head in heaven (3). In the passage referred to, we see the happy centripetal and centrifugal forces which carried him on through the circle of duty; he constantly tended and gravitated to his centre of rest;

(1) Ἀπορραγισθέντες. 1 Thess. ii. 17.

(2) Col. ii. 1.

(3) Phil. i. 23. 24.



but successive opportunities of usefulness and service drew him off, and made him willing to wait yet longer.

In this part of his character we are not to consider him exclusively as an apostle. All who have truly known the gospel to be the power of God unto salvation, are partakers of the same spirit, according to the measure of their faith. That person is unworthy the name of a Christian, who does not feel a concern and affection for his brethren who are in the world. It must be allowed, that prejudices and misapprehensions too often prevent the Lord's people from knowing each other; but, so far as they believe a person to be a child of God through faith, they cannot but love him. This is the immutable criterion which our Lord himself has given, whereby his real disciples are to be known and acknowledged (1). He has not directed us to judge by their discourses, their knowledge, or even their zeal, but by the evidence they give of mutual love: and we may as easily conceive of a sun without light, or a cause without an effect, as of a person duly affected with a sense of the glory of God, and the love of Christ, and not proportionably filled with a spirit of love to all who are like minded. But especially this disposition is essential to a minister of the gospel; and the apostle assures us, that all imaginable qualifications are of no avail without it; though we could possess the powers of a prophet, or an angel, or the zeal of a martyr, if we are destitute of this love, we are, in the sight of God, but as sounding brass \*, or a tinkling cymbal.

### III. St

(1) John, xiii. 35.

\* *Sounding brass*, without meaning, and without life. Such are the most specious gifts and performances, if unaccompanied by a spirit of love: they may perhaps be useful to others, (as the sound of



III. St Paul's inflexible attachment to the great doctrines of the gospel is another part of his character which deserves our attention: he knew their worth, experienced their power in his own soul, and saw, that, though they were unacceptable to the wisdom of the world, they bore the impress of the manifold wisdom of God. He takes notice, that, in those early days, there were many who corrupted the word of God (1). The word properly signifies to adulterate, to imitate the practice of dishonest vintners, who mix and sophisticate their liquors, so that, though the colour is preserved, and the taste perhaps nearly counterfeited, the quality and properties are quite altered and depraved. But he says, We are not as they: He preached the gospel in its purity and simplicity; the sincere genuine milk of the word, neither weakened by water (2), nor disguised by any artful sweetening to render it more palatable: he added nothing of his own, nor employed any art or gloss to palliate the truth, that it might be more acceptable to men of carnal minds: as he was not ashamed of it, neither was he afraid lest it should fall without success to the ground, if not supported and assisted by inventions of his own: he knew whose word it was, and therefore cheerfully ventured the issue with Him who alone could procure it a welcome reception; and as he disdained the thought of deviating a tittle himself from the plain and full declaration of the truth, neither could he bear, no not for an hour, with those who presumed to do so (3). I doubt not but the

of a bell gives notice, and brings people together), but the possessor himself is a lifeless instrument; he designs no good, and will receive no reward.

(1) Κατηλιονεις. 2 Cor. ii. 17. (2) Αδολον γαλα. 1 Per. ii. 2.

(3) Gal. 2. 5.



warmth of his zeal, in this respect, has disgusted many in the present day, wherein a seeming candour and forbearance is pleaded for and extended to almost every sentiment, except the truths in which St Paul gloried. There is little doubt but many, if they had the courage and honesty to speak out, would add St Paul himself to the list of those whom they despise as uncharitable and hot-brained bigots; for who has offended more than he against the rules of that indifference to error, which is at present miscalled *charity*? The Galatians, in a short time after he left them, had ventured to admit some alteration in the doctrine they had received from him; it was chiefly in one point; they had been persuaded into an undue regard for the law of Moses. This, some may think, was little more than a circumstantial; that it could not have any great or direct influence upon their moral practice; and that they might be very good men, and good Christians, though, in this one thing, they could not see exactly with their teacher's eyes. But how different was the apostle's judgement! If the Galatians had returned to the practice of idolatry, or broke out into the most scandalous immoralities, he could hardly have expressed his surprise and grief in stronger terms: he changes his usual manner of address, and speaks to them as a senseless people (1), under the power of some unaccountable fascination: he tells them, that, by admitting such an addition (2), small and inconsiderable as they might think it, they had, in effect, received another gospel, which was however so enervated and despoiled of efficacy, that it was, more properly speaking, become no gospel at all, utterly unworthy the least pretence to the name. Farther, he denounces an

(1) Gal. iii. 1.

(2) Gal. i. 6.—9.

anathema



anathema (the highest curse) upon any person who should dare to preach any such pretended gospel, even though, if such a thing were possible, it should be himself, or an angel from heaven: and this denunciation he immediately repeats, lest it should be thought that he spoke rather from warmth of temper than from a just sense of the importance of the case. What would some of my readers think of a man who should, at this time, express himself in terms like these? But let it be remembered, that our apostle, who was so ready with an anathema upon this occasion, and who, in another place, passes the same severe judgement (1) upon any man who does not love the Lord Jesus Christ, was far from speaking thus from emotions of anger and ill will: the disposition of his own mind, the tender concern with which he viewed the worst of sinners, may be judged of from his willingness to be made an anathema himself (2), after the manner of Christ, if, by all he could suffer, he might be a means of saving the Jews, who were his worst enemies, and from whom he had constantly received the most unjust and cruel treatment: but when the cause of the gospel, and the honour of Christ were in question, he could not, he durst not, consult with the feelings of flesh and blood; but, as the minister and messenger of the Lord, he solemnly declared what must and will be the awful consequence of neglecting or corrupting the word of life.

Every faithful minister of the gospel is possessed of a degree of the same attention to the purity of the truth and faith once delivered to the saints; they must not deviate from their instructions, nor can they behold with indifference the specious attempts of others to mislead the unwary; they

(1) 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

(2) Rom. ix. 3.



know what censures they must expect upon this account: it is sufficient for them that they can appeal to the searcher of hearts, that though, as the servants of Christ, they dare not aim to please men, by speaking smooth things, yet they act from principles of benevolence and love, and would rejoice in the salvation of their greatest opposers. The world perhaps would judge more favourably of them if they knew all; if they were witnesses to the prayers and tears which they pour out for them in secret, and the emotions of mind they feel when they are constrained to declare the more awful parts of their message; but as ministers, and in their public work, they cannot avoid pointing out the danger of those who venture their souls and eternal hopes upon any other doctrine than that which St Paul preached.

IV. But though St Paul was so tenacious of the great foundation-truths of the gospel, and would not admit or connive at any doctrine that interfered with them, he exercised, upon all occasions, a great tenderness to weak consciences, in matters that were not essential to the faith, and when the scruples were owing rather to a want of clear light than to obstinacy. This was evident in his conduct with regard to the great controversy that soon took place between the Jewish and Gentile converts, about the distinction of meats and drinks, and other rituals enjoined by the law of Moses; the obligation (1) of which, many who had been educated in the practice of those observances, did not immediately see superseded by the gospel of Christ: he knew and asserted his own liberty; yet, in condescension to the weakness of others, he often abridged himself of it, and declared, that rather than grieve or cause offence to a weak brother, he would

(1) Rom. xiv. 20.9



eat no meat while the world stood. His practice herein will probably be of general application *mutatis mutandis*, so long as the present state of human infirmity subsists. A defect in knowledge, the prejudices of education and custom, the remains of a legal spirit, the influence of great names, and other causes of a like nature, will probably always operate, so far as to keep up lesser differences in judgement and practice amongst those who agree in the great and fundamental truths. The enemy gains too much advantage from these things, not to improve such differences into divisions. Self is too prevalent in the best men, and the tendency of self is, to exact submission, to hurry to extremes, to exaggerate trifles into points of great consequence, and to render us averse to the healing expedients of peace. From these sources, discords and evils innumerable have been multiplied and perpetuated among the various denominations under which the Lord's people have been ranged, which have greatly hindered the welfare and progress of the common cause, and exposed each contending party to the scorn of their real enemies. But were the spirit and conduct of our apostle more adopted, many debates would entirely cease; and in those things where a difference of judgement would still subsist, the exercise of patience, gentleness, and mutual forbearance, would perhaps afford fairer occasion for the display of the Christian character, than if we were all exactly of a mind; then the strong would bear the infirmities of the weak, the one would not censure, nor the other despise; nor would those whose minds have been enlarged by a variety of experience and observation, think it at all strange, much less would they be angry, if others, who have not had the same advantages, cannot immediately enter into all their sentiments. St Paul, in knowledge, abilities, and usefulness, was eminently



eminently superior to all those among whom he chiefly conversed, and, as an apostle, he had a stronger right than any man since the apostle's day could have, to exact an implicit deference and submission; but he had drunk deeply of the Spirit of his Master, and we are concerned to follow him, as he followed Christ, in the exercise of tenderness to the weakest of the flock.

It is not my present business to define what are properly essentials in the Christian religion, and to separate them clearly from the less important points, which, for that reason, and in contradistinction to the other, are called *circumstantials*. This would lead me too far, though, perhaps, it would not be so difficult as a person might at first expect, who should be told of all that has been written (with little satisfaction) upon the subject. I foresee a future period in our history, when a disquisition of this kind will be almost necessary; and if I am spared to reach so far, I shall probably embrace the occasion. In the mean time I would just hint an observation or two upon this head, which the intelligent reader (if he thinks them just) may apply as he sees proper.

1. Circumstantials and essentials in religion (if we speak with propriety) are derived from the same source, and resolved into the same authority. To consider the commands of God as essentials, and the inventions and traditions of men superadded thereto, as circumstantials, would be a very improper, and indeed a very false division of the subject. Nothing but what is prescribed by the word of God, or may be fairly deduced from it, is worthy the name even of a circumstantial in true religion. Human appointments, if not repugnant to scripture and the light of conscience, may be submitted to for the sake of peace, or when the general purposes of edification cannot be attained without them;



them; but they seem not to deserve a place even among the circumstantials of a religion which is of divine institution. All the laboured arguments, whether for or against the colour of a garment, the shape of a building, and a multitude of other things equally insignificant, seem to have occasioned a needless loss of time and temper, chiefly by a mistake of the question on both sides.

2. Essentials in Christianity are those things without which no man can be a Christian in the sight of God, and by the decision of his word; and, on the other hand, those things only are essential, which whoever possesses, is, by scripture-declaration, in a state of favour with God through Christ. These might be branched out into many particulars; but they are fully and surely comprised in two, Faith and Holiness. These are essential to the being of a Christian, are only to be found in a Christian, are infallible tokens that the possessor is accepted in the beloved, and whoever dies without them must assuredly perish: these are essentials, because they are absolutely necessary; for it is written, "He that believeth not shall be damned (1)," and "Without holiness no man shall see the Lord (2):" and they are essential likewise, because they demonstrate an interest in the promise of everlasting life. Thus our Lord declares, "He that heareth my words, and believeth in him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed from death unto life (3);" and the apostle, writing to the believing Romans, tells them, "Now being made free from sin, and become the servants of God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life (4)." These then are the es-

(1) Mark, xvi. 16.

(2) Heb. xii. 14.

(3) John, v. 24.

(4) Rom. vi. 22.

entials



essentials of religion; and though they are produced by the same power of the Holy Spirit, and derived from a knowledge of the same truths, and therefore cannot be separated, they may properly be distinguished, for the conviction of those who pretend to one without the other. The most specious appearances of holiness, which are not accompanied with faith in Christ, may be safely rejected as counterfeits. On the other hand, a profession of faith which is not evidenced by the fruits of holiness, by gracious tempers, and a tenor of life becoming the gospel, is dead, delusory, and destructive.

If the question is removed another step, and it should be asked, Which, or how many, of the doctrines of scripture are necessary to produce the faith and holiness supposed requisite? it may suffice to say, That, in the nature of things, no person can be expected to believe in Christ, till convinced of his need of him, and of his ability, as a Saviour, fully to answer his expectations: and as a supreme love to God, and a hatred of all sin, are evidently included in the idea of holiness, it supposes a disposition of mind, which every man's experience proves to be beyond the power of fallen nature; and therefore a competent knowledge and cordial acceptance of what the scripture teaches, concerning the nature and desert of sin, the person and mediatory acts of Christ, the causes, ends, and effects of his mediation, together with the necessity of that change of heart which is expressed by a being born again, appear to be essentially necessary to that faith and holiness which are described in the gospel.

3. The circumstantial of religion include all those particulars of revelation, which a person, possessed of the above-mentioned essentials, may as yet be unacquainted with, or unable to judge of with certainty. A careful application to the scripture, a diligent



diligent waiting upon God in prayer, and an improvement of the means of grace, will (by the divine blessing, which is promised to those who seek in this manner) increase our light, comprehension, and certainty, with regard to these points, which, though not essentially necessary to the being of a Christian, are exceedingly conducive to his well-being, to his growth and establishment in the truth.

This subject may be perhaps illustrated from the animal frame, in which what we call the vital parts may be considered as essential to life, because there can be no life without them. We may easily conceive, that a man may live without an arm or leg, or several members and organs, which, though highly valuable for use and comfort, are not necessarily connected with life; but if we conceive of him as deprived of his head, heart, or lungs, we can no longer consider him as living: yet it is desirable to have a body not only animated but organized. So likewise in religion, those who are truly partakers of it will not too curiously inquire, how much knowledge, or what degree of practice, is barely consistent with a possibility of life, but they will earnestly desire to be acquainted with the whole will of God, and that every part of it may have a suitable influence upon their practice: but in the mean time a consolation is provided, in the promises of God made to those who have received the seeds of faith and true holiness, against the fears, doubts, and involuntary mistakes, which, from remaining ignorance, they are yet subject to: he will supply what is wanting, pardon what is amiss, and lead them on from strength to strength; they are to walk by the light already afforded, to wait on him for an increase, to be diffident of themselves and gentle to others, and things which as yet they know not, God will in his due time

VOL. III.

U

reveal



reveal to them.— But to return from this digression :

V. Every part of St Paul's history and writings demonstrates a disinterested spirit, and that his uncommon labours were directed to no other ends than the glory of God and the good of men. No man had probably so great an influence over his hearers, or could have a juster claim, from the nature and number of his services, to a suitable provision for himself; but he could say with truth, We seek not yours, but you. To cut off all occasions of misapprehension on this head, he usually submitted to work with his own hands, rather than \* be chargeable to his friends. It is true, he does not propose himself to us a pattern in this respect; for he tells us (1), that the labourer is worthy of his hire; and that the Lord had ordained, that those who preach the gospel should live by the gospel; and when he saw it expedient, he did not refuse to be himself assisted by others. He shewed, by accepting such assistance from some, that he understood his liberty, and did not act from a spirit of pride or singularity when he declined it; and, by his more general practice, he evidenced that he was superior to all selfish and mercenary motives; and, upon the whole, he was content to appear and live as a poor man; and though he had learnt, in the school of Christ, how to abound as well as to

\* 1 Cor. ix. 18. That—I may make the gospel of Christ without charge.— *ἄδωκεν ἑμαυτὸν*, that I may set it before you *gratis*, or a free gospel. The messengers of good news are usually gratified with a reward; but the apostle, though he brought the most welcome and important tidings that ever rejoiced the hearts of men, would not incumber or disgrace the news, by receiving any thing for it. The truth is, he took as much pleasure in delivering his message as they could in hearing it, and found his reward in his employment.

(1) 1 Cor. ix. 14.

suffer



suffer want, the latter seems to have been more frequently his lot (1): he saw too many false teachers, who, under the sanction of a sacred character, made merchandize of souls; and he not only severely censured them, but, by this self-denial, which they were unable to imitate, he manifested the vanity of their pretences in setting themselves forth as the apostles of Christ. This seems to have been his chief design in it, and the reason of his repeating, with so much earnestness, his determination to take nothing from the Corinthians, who were too much inclined to listen to some of these teachers, to his disadvantage. But whatever parade they might make of gifts or zeal, or however they might presume to equal themselves to him in other respects, he knew they would not attempt to share with him in the glory of preaching the gospel freely, which was diametrically inconsistent with their whole design. The circumstances with us are so far different, that, in proposing St Paul as a pattern of disinterestedness, we do not lay a stress upon his preaching the gospel without expence to his hearers; yet, in his noble contempt of worldly advantage, and making every thing stoop to the great ends of his mission, he stands as a precedent to all Christian ministers in succeeding times. In those passages of his epistles to Timothy and Titus, where the negative part of a minister's character, whether bishop or deacon, is given, this is constantly one branch of it, that he must not be influenced by a love of gain; and as constantly the word is compounded with the epithet *filthy*: "Not given to filthy lucre;" — to intimate, that nothing can be more dishonest or dishonourable than to make a traffic of this service. Nor is this the judgement of scripture only, but the general voice of man-

(1) Phil. iv. 12.



kind. Nothing is a greater bar to a minister's usefulness, or renders his person and labours more contemptible, than a known attachment to money, a gripping fist, and a hard heart. They who enter into the priest's office for a piece of bread, who are less concerned for the flock than the fleece, who employ all their arts and influence to exchange a less emolument for a greater, or to superadd one to another, may have the reward they seek; but of all the methods of acquiring wealth, which do not directly expose a man to the lash of human laws, this is the most to be lamented, and avoided. If the scriptures are true, if St Paul was a servant of Christ, and if the authority of his precepts and example is still binding, a day will come when mercenary preachers will wish they had begged their bread from door to door, or been chained to the oar of a galley for life, rather than have presumed to intrude into the church upon such base and unworthy views. It is to be feared, that too many read the awful denunciations upon this head, in the prophets Jeremiah (1) and Ezekiel (2), with indifference, as supposing they only relate to the Jews who lived at that time; but they are equally applicable to all who prostitute the word and worship of God to the purposes of ambition and avarice.

VI. From the foregoing particulars we may collect the idea of true Christian zeal, as exemplified in our apostle. Hardly any word in our language is more misunderstood or abused, than *zeal* \*. It is used in the New Testament indifferently in a good

(1) Jer. xxiii.

(2) Ezek. xiii. & xxxiv.

\* All religious parties profess a great regard to the precept, Jude, 3. "Contend earnestly for the faith." And if noisy anger, bold assertions, harsh censures, and bitter persecuting zeal, can singly



good or bad sense; and it is considered as a vice or virtue, according to its object and principle. It sometimes denotes envy (1), indignation, or disdain, an obstinate and ignorant opposition to the truth, a misguided warmth in unnecessary things, and a contentious disputatious temper. A zeal replete with these characters has too frequently been the bane and opprobrium of the Christian church; but it is good to be zealously affected in a good thing; and then it is sinful to be otherwise. Our passions were not given us in vain. When the judgement is well informed, and the understanding duly enlightened by the word of God, the more warmth the better; but this earnestness, in an ignorant or prejudiced person, is dangerous, and hurtful to himself and others: it is like haste in a man in the dark, who knows not where he is going, nor what mischiefs he may suffer or occasion. False zeal spends its strength in defence of names and forms, the externals of religion, or the inventions of men: it enforces its edicts by compulsion and severity: it would willingly call for fire from heaven; but, unable to do this, it kindles the flame of persecution, and, if not providentially restrained, wages war with the peace, comfort, and liber-

singly or jointly answer the apostle's design, there is hardly a party but may glory in their obedience: But if the weapons of our warfare are not carnal; — if the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God; — if the true Christian contention can only be maintained by scripture-arguments, meekness, patience, prayer, and an exemplary conversation; — if this is the true state of the case, where is the church, or party, (may I not say, where is the person), that has not still much to learn and to practise in this point?

(1) Compare Acts, v. 17. Rom. xiii. 13. x. 2. Phil. iii. 6. Gal. i. 14. Acts, xxi. 20. James, iii. 16.; in all which places the word is the same that is rendered *zeal* in 2. Cor. ix. 2. Col. iv. 13. John, ii. 17.



ty, of all who disdain to wear its chains, and breathes threatening, slaughter, and destruction, with an unrelenting spirit : its mildest weapons (which it never employs alone, except where it is checked by a superior power) are calumny, contempt, and hatred ; and the objects it seeks to worry are generally the quiet in the land, and those who worship God in spirit and in truth : in a word, it resembles the craft by which it works, and is earthly, sensual, devilish. But the true Christian zeal is a heavenly gentle flame : it shines and warms, but knows not to destroy : it is the spirit of Christ infused, with a sense of his love, into the heart : it is a generous philanthropy and benevolence, which, like the light of the sun, diffuses itself to every object, and longs to be the instrument of good, if possible, to the whole race of mankind. A sense of the worth of souls, the importance of unseen things, and the awful condition of unawakened sinners, makes it indeed earnest and importunate ; but this it shews not by bitterness and constraint, but by an unwearied perseverance in attempting to overcome \* evil with good : it returns blessings for curses, prayers for ill treatment ; and, tho' often reviled and affronted, cannot be discouraged from renewed efforts to make others partakers of the happiness itself possesses : it knows how to express a becoming indignation against the errors and follies of men ; but towards their persons it is all

\* See Rom. xlii. 20. 21. This practice the apostle recommends by the metaphor of heaping coals of fire on an enemy's head. As metals that endure a moderate warmth, without alteration, are melted down and quite dissolved by an intense heat ; so the hard heart, even of an enemy, may be sometimes softened by a series, an indefatigable heaping up, of favours and obligations. This is a noble piece of chemistry ; but almost as much out of repute and practice as the search after the philosopher's stone.

gentleness



gentleness and compassion \* : it weeps (and would, if possible, weep tears of blood) over those who will not be persuaded; but while it plainly represents the consequences of their obstinacy, it trembles at † its own declarations, and feels for them who cannot feel for themselves : it is often grieved, but cannot be provoked. The zealous Christian is strictly observant of his own *failings*, candid and tender to the *faults* of others : he knows what allowances are due to the frailty of human nature, and the temptations of the present state, and willingly makes all the allowances possible : and tho' he dare not call evil good, cannot but judge according to the rule of the scripture ; yet he will conceal the infirmities of men as much as he can, will not speak of them without just cause, much less will he aggravate the case, or boast himself over them. Such was the zeal of our apostle : bold and intrepid in the cause of God and truth, unwearied in service, inflexible in danger, when duty called, he was not to be restrained, either by the threats

\* When St Paul, speaking of the Judaizing false teachers, and their adherents, says, "I would they were even cut off which trouble you," he seems to allude to the circumcision they so strenuously enforced, Gal. v. 12. compare Phil. iii. 2. His wish concerning these sectaries has been often perverted, to give sanction to the rage of persecutors ; but he does not mean to cut them off with fire and sword, or to cut them off from fire and water, but to have them excluded from communion and converse with true believers.

† How awful to declare, to denounce the terrors of the Lord ! those terrors which are represented to us by fire unquenchable, with the additional idea of eternity, Matth. iii. 12. Mark, ix. 43. As such descriptions shock and alarm a guilty conscience, there are two different methods by which the removal of this alarm is attempted : some seek and find peace and security from the blood of Jesus ; and some, who are not pleased with this method, satisfy themselves, and their friends, with criticisms upon the terms ; and tell us, that the phrase "for ever and ever" signifies a limited space, and "fire that cannot be quenched" denotes fire that goes out of itself.

of



of enemies, the solicitations of friends, or the prospect of any hardships to which he might be exposed; he chearfully endured hunger and thirst, watching and weariness, poverty and contempt, and counted not his life dear, so that he might fulfil the great purposes of the ministry which he had received of the Lord. But at the same time, in all his intercourse with men, he was gentle, mild, and compassionate: he studied the peace, and accommodated himself to the weakness, of all about him: when he might command, he used intreaties; when he met with hard and injurious treatment, he bore it patiently; and, if opportunity offered, requited it with kindness. Thus as he had drunk of the spirit, so he walked in the steps of his Lord and Master.

All who bear the name of ministers of Christ, would do well to examine how far their tempers and conduct are conformable to St Paul's. Are there not too many who widely differ from him? Where he was immoveable as an iron pillar, they are flexible and yielding as a reed waving in the wind, suiting their doctrines and practice to the depraved taste of the world, and prostituting their talents and calling to the unworthy pursuit of ambition and applause. On the other hand, in things less essential, or not commanded, they invade the rights of private judgement, and attempt to bind heavy yokes \* and impositions upon those whom Christ has made free; and while they readily tole-

\* Matth. xxiii. 4. "They bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be borne," a weight of traditions and observances, "and lay them upon mens shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers." There is a double opposition in this passage, between to *be borne* and to *move*, and between the *shoulders* and a *finger*. It has been often found since, that those who are most impatient of restraint themselves are most earnest in pressing yokes and bonds upon others.



rate, if not countenance, scepticism and immorality, they exert all their strength and subtlety to disquiet or suppress those who differ from them in the slightest circumstance, if they profess to differ for conscience sake. But Jesus has no such ministers: their claim is utterly vain; none but those who are ignorant of the plainest truths can allow them this character: their tempers, their behaviour, the tenor of their professed instructions, and the total want of efficacy and influence in their ministrations, plainly demonstrate, that he neither sent them, nor owns them.

VII. Having considered the subject-matter, and the leading views, of the apostle's ministry, it may not be improper to take some notice of his *manner* as a preacher. This he reminds the Corinthians of. They were reputed a polite and ingenious people. St Paul was aware of their character, and expresses himself as if he had been deliberating, before he saw them, in what way he should address them with the fairest probability of success. He tells them (1), that he determined to know nothing among them but Jesus Christ, and him crucified; including, in this one comprehensive expression, the whole scheme of gospel-doctrine. And as to the *manner* in which he delivered this doctrine, he says, "My speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and with power." We are sure that he did not renounce justness of reasoning, or propriety of expression; in these respects he exceeded their most admired orators, as may appear to any who have skill and candour to compare his epistles and discourses, in the original, with the best performances of the Greek writers; but he renounced *the enticing or plausible words of*

(1) 1 Cor. ii. 1. — 4.



*man's wisdom.* In the term *man's wisdom*, I apprehend, may be included whatever the natural faculties of man are capable of discovering or receiving, independent of the peculiar teaching of the Spirit of God, which is promised and restrained to those who, sensible of their own foolishness, are brought to believe in Jesus Christ, the wisdom of God; and the *enticing words* of man's wisdom may include all those ways and arts which the wise men of the world have used, or approved, as most effectual to express, adorn \*, or defend, their own wise sentiments and discoveries. These, and the methods of setting them off to advantage, have been divided into many branches, and dignified with sounding names; but all the efforts of man's wisdom, considered as engaged in the subjects of religion and morals, may be summed up in three particulars: 1. A vain inquiry into things which lie wholly beyond the capacity of man in his present state, and which can only be discovered by supernatural revelation; 2. A vain attempt to account for every thing according to the light and principles of depraved reason; 3. A studious exactness in language, either an easy flow of words to please and amuse the ear, or a torrent of strong and figurative expressions to engage the passions, according as a different taste or fashion happens to pre-

\* In 1 Cor. xiv. 9. St Paul recommends "words easy to be understood." His reasoning in that chapter is levelled, not only against the absurdity of speaking in an unknown tongue, but against the use of any terms, or the treating upon any subjects, which are not adapted to the level of the auditory. Many discourses that are expressed in English phrases, are as useless to the bulk of the people as if they were delivered in Greek; for what have the people to do with scholastic or metaphysical niceties, or curious researches into antiquity, or elegant dissertations upon the fineness of things? They cannot understand them; and if they could, they would find them nothing to their purpose.

vail.



vail. It would be too dry a task to illustrate these points, by adducing specimens of each from the works of the ancient and modern philosophers; but if we had not other employment in hand, it would be easy to shew, that man's wisdom, in the first sense, is Uncertainty; in the second, Prejudice; in the third, Imposition and Artifice. It is sufficient for my present purpose, that the apostle renounced them all. Instead of vain \* conjectures, he spoke from certain experience; he could say, I received of the Lord that which I also delivered to you. Instead of accommodating his doctrine to the taste and judgement of his hearers, he spoke with authority, in the name of God whom he served: instead of losing time in measuring words and syllables, that he might obtain the character of a fine speaker, he spoke, from the feeling and fulness of his heart, the words of simplicity and truth. The success of his preaching did not at all depend upon the softness and harmony of his periods; and therefore he disdained an attention to those petty ornaments of speech, which were quite necessary to help out the poverty of *man's wisdom*; he sought something else, which those who preach themselves, rather than Christ Jesus the Lord, have little reason † to expect; I mean, the power and demonstration

\* Though the apostle disclaimed the light sophistry which obtained in the schools, the tenor of his preaching was founded upon the clearest principles, and contained a chain of the justest consequences. He did not only assert, but prove and demonstrate, the truth of his doctrines, by ancient prophecies, by recent facts, and by a present incontestible efficacy. Yet it is called "the demonstration of the Spirit," to intimate, that the strongest and best adapted evidence is insufficient to the purposes of salvation, unless accompanied with a divine power.

† A man who has languages and science in his head, but does not know or relish the gospel of Christ, is an ignorant, indeed a stupid person, unaffected with the grandest view of wisdom, power, and



demonstration of the Spirit : he knew that this alone could give him success : and ministers may learn from him what to avoid, and what to seek for, if they would be useful to their hearers. Men can but *declare* the truths of the gospel : it is the Spirit of God who alone can *reveal* them : nothing less than a divine power can present them to the mind in their just importance, and throw light into the soul, by which they may be perceived : nothing less than this power can subdue the will, and open the heart to receive the truth in the love of it : without this concurring agency, even St Paul would have preached in vain. From what has been said, we may remark two obvious reasons, amongst others, why we have so much unsuccessful preaching in our days ; either the gospel-truths are given up, or the gospel-simplicity departed from. Where either of these is the case, the Lord refuses his power and blessing.

VIII. Another observable part of St Paul's character, is his unaffected humility. In the midst of his eminent and extensive services, he retained a deep sense of the part he once acted against the Lord. He speaks of himself, on this account, in the most abasing language, as the chief of sinners, and strongly expresses his unworthiness of the grace and apostleship he had received, by comparing himself to an untimely birth \* ; and though his insight  
into

and goodness, that ever was or can be displayed ; and whoever truly knows and embraces this mystery of godliness, is a wise man, a person of an excellent understanding, though he may not be much acquainted with those uncertain, unsatisfying systems, which men have agreed to honour with the name of knowledge. See Pl. cxi. 10.

\* 1 Cor. xv. 8. As one born out of due time. The original word is *Εκτρακα*, that is, *An abortion*. He speaks of himself under this despicable image, (the true sense of which is not easily perceived by an English reader), to shew the deep and humbling  
case



into the mysteries of the gospel, the communion he maintained with God, by faith in his Son, and the beauty of holiness which shone in his conversation, were all beyond the common measure; yet having, in the same proportion, a clearer sense of his obligations, and of the extent and purity of the divine precepts, he thought nothing of his present attainments, in comparison of those greater degrees of grace he was still pressing after\*. While, in the eyes of others, he appeared not only exemplary, but unequalled, he esteemed himself less than the least of all saints (1); and his patience and condescension towards others, and his acquiescence under all the trying dispensations of Providence with which he was exercised, were a proof that this was not an affected manner of expression, but the genuine dictate of his heart. To speak of one's self in abasing terms is easy; and such language is often a thin veil, through which the motions of pride may be easily discerned: but though the language of humility may be counterfeited, its real fruits and actions are inimitable. Here again he is a pattern for Christians. An humble frame of mind is the strength and ornament of every other grace, and the proper soil wherein they grow. A proud Christian, that is,

sense he retained of the part he once acted against the church of Christ; he considered himself as unworthy and contemptible to the last degree, as one of whom no good hope could be justly formed at that time, much less that he should be honoured with a sight of the Lord Jesus from heaven, and with a call to the apostolic office.

\* Phil. iii. 13. "Forgetting the things that are behind." As a traveller upon urgent business posts from place to place, forgets the distance and inconveniences behind him, and has all his thoughts taken up with the place he would be at, and the remainder of the road that leads to it.

(1) Ephes. iii. 8.



one who has a high conceit of his own abilities and attainments, is no less a contradiction than a sober drunkard, or a generous miser. All other seeming excellencies are of no real value, unless accompanied with this; and though a person should appear to have little more than a consciousness of his own insufficiency, and a teachable dependent spirit, and is waiting upon the Lord, in his appointed way, for instruction and a blessing, he will infallibly thrive, as a tree planted by the water-side (1); for God, who resisteth the proud, has promised to give grace to the humble. But, in an especial manner, humility is necessary and beautiful in a minister; the greatest abilities, and most unwearied diligence, will not ensure success without it; a secret (if allowed) apprehension of his own importance, will deprive him of that assistance without which he can do nothing; his arm will be dried up, and his right eye will be darkened (2): for the Lord of Hosts hath purposed to stain the pride of all human glory, and will honour none but those who abase themselves, and are willing to give all the praise to him alone. If any man had ground to set a value upon his knowledge, gifts, and services, St Paul might justly claim the pre-eminence: but though he was an apostle, and an inspired writer; though he had planted churches through a considerable part of the known world; though he was received as an angel by many to whom he preached, and, by a peculiar favour, had been caught up into the third heaven; yet he was, by grace, preserved from being exalted above measure, or from assuming an undue superiority over his brethren. The authority with which he was entrusted he employed solely to their advantage, and accounted himself the

(1) James, iv. 6.

(2) Zech. xi. 17.



least of all, and the servant of all. How very opposite has been the conduct of many since his time, who have aimed to appropriate the name of ministers of Christ, exclusively, to themselves !

Such was our apostle ; and the same spirit (tho' in an inferior degree) will be found in all the faithful ministers of the Lord Jesus : they love his name ; it is the pleasing theme of their ministry ; and to render it glorious in the eyes of sinners is the great study of their lives : for his sake they love all who love him, and are their willing servants to promote the comfort and edification of their souls : they love his gospel, faithfully proclaim it without disguise or alteration, and shun not to declare the whole counsel of God, so far as they are themselves acquainted with it ; they contend earnestly for the faith once delivered to the saints, and are desirous to preserve and maintain the truth in its power and purity : the knowledge of their own weakness and fallibility makes them tender to the weaknesses of others ; and though they dare not lay, or allow, any other foundation than that which God has laid in Zion ; yet, knowing that the kingdom of God does not consist in meats and drinks, but in righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost, they guard against the influence of a party-spirit ; and, if their labours are confined to Christians of one denomination, their love and prayers are not limited within such narrow bounds, but extend to all who love and serve their master : they have entered upon the ministry, not for low and sordid ends, for popular applause, or filthy lucre, but from a constraining sense of the love of Jesus, and a just regard to the worth and danger of immortal souls : their zeal is conducted and modelled by the example and precepts of their Lord ; their desire is not to destroy, but to save, and they wish their greatest enemies a participation in  
X 2 their



their choicest blessings. In the subject matter and the manner of their preaching, they shew, that they seek not to be men-pleasers, but to commend the truth to every man's conscience in the sight of God; and when they have done their utmost, and when God has blessed their labours, and given them acceptance and success beyond their hopes, they are conscious of the defects and evils attending their best endeavours, of the weak influence the truths they preach to others have upon their own hearts, that their sufficiency of every kind is of God, and not of themselves; and therefore they sit down ashamed, as unprofitable servants, and can rejoice or glory in nothing, but in Him who came into the world to save the chief of sinners.

It might be expected that a spirit and conduct, thus uniformly benevolent and disinterested, and witnessed to, in a greater or less degree, by the good effect of their ministry and example amongst their hearers, would secure them the good-will of mankind, and intitle them to peace, if not to respect: but, on the contrary, these are the very people who are represented as deceivers of souls, and disturbers of society; they are not permitted to live in some places; and it is owing to a concurrence of favourable circumstances if they are permitted to speak in any: the eyes of many are upon them, watching for their halting; their infirmities are aggravated, their expressions wrested, their endeavours counteracted, and their persons despised. The design of our history is, to shew, in the course of every period of the church, that those who have approached nearest to the character I have attempted to delineate from St Paul \*, have

\* Our Lord's declaration, " Behold I send you forth as lambs  
" in



have always met with such treatment; and from his declaration, that All who live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution (1), we may expect it will always be so, while human nature and the state of the world remain as they are. However, it may be a consolation to those who suffer for righteousness sake, to reflect, that the apostles were treated thus before them, particularly St Paul, who, as he laboured, so he suffered more abundantly than the rest; his person was treated with contempt and despite, his character traduced, his doctrine misrepresented; and though his natural and acquired abilities were great, and he spoke with power and the demonstration of the Spirit, yet he was esteemed the filth and off-scouring of all things, a (2) babler and a madman \*.

"in the midst of wolves," is applicable to all his servants. The sight of a lamb is sufficient to provoke the rage and appetite of a wolf: thus the spirit of the gospel awakens the rage and opposition of the world; they have an antipathy to it, and owe it a grudge where-ever they see it.

\* 2 Cor. v. 13. See likewise Mark iii. 21. "And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold of him, for they said, He is beside himself;" that is to say, his attention to the office he has undertaken has transported him beyond the bounds of reason, and made him forget his station, his friends, and his safety, therefore, out of pure affection and prudence, they would have confined him: Nor is it any wonder that our Lord's friends and relatives should thus think and speak of him, since we are assured that even his brethren did not believe on him, John vii. 3. And there seems to have been no possible medium. All who were conversant with him, must either receive him as the Messiah, or pity, if not despite, him as a madman. This was the mildest judgement they could form; — the Pharisees indeed went farther, and pronounced him an impostor and a devil. Such was the treatment our Lord and Master found. Let not then his disciples and servants be surprised or grieved that they are misrepresented and misunderstood, on account of their attachment to him; but let them comfort themselves with his gracious words, John xv. 18. — 21.

(1) 2 Tim. iii. 12.

(2) Acts, xvii. 18.



## C H A P. III.

*Of the irregularities and offences which appeared in the apostolic churches.*

There are few things in which the various divisions of professing Christians are so generally agreed, as in speaking highly and honourably of primitive Christianity. In many persons this is no more than an ignorant admiration, not capable of distinguishing what is truly praise-worthy, but disposed to applaud every thing in the gross that has the sanction of antiquity to recommend it. The primitive Christians have been looked upon, by some, as if they were not men of the same nature and infirmities with ourselves, but nearly infallible and perfect. This is often taken for granted in general; and when particulars are insisted on, it is observable, that they are seldom taken from the records of the New Testament, and the churches which flourished in the apostles times; but rather from those who lived in and after the second century, when a considerable deviation in doctrine, spirit, and conduct, from those which were indeed the primitive churches, had already taken place, and there were evident appearances of that curiosity, ambition, and will-worship, which increased by a swift progress, till at length professed Christianity degenerated into little more than an empty name.

If Christians of the early ages are supposed to have been more exemplary than in after periods, chiefly because they lived nearer to the times of our Lord and his apostles, it will follow of course, that *the earlier the better*. We may then expect to find most of the Christian spirit among those who were



were converted and edified by the apostles personal ministry; and though we cannot allow the assumption, (for the power of godliness depends not upon dates, periods, or instruments, but upon the influences of the Holy Spirit), yet we are content to join issue upon the conclusion, and are willing that all claims to a revival of religion, and a real reformation of manners, shall be admitted or rejected, as they accord or disagree with the accounts we have of the churches planted by the apostles, and during the time that these authorised ministers of Christ presided over them. We can find no other period in which we can, to so much advantage, propose the visible churches of Christ as a pattern and specimen of what his grace and gospel may be expected to produce in the present state of human nature; for the apostles were furnished, in an extraordinary manner, with zeal, wisdom, and authority for their work, and God was remarkably present with them, by the power of his spirit. Besides, as all the information we have concerning this period is derived from the inspired writings, we have that certainty of facts to ground our observations upon which no other history can afford.

We have a pleasing description of the first of these churches, which was formed at Jerusalem soon after our Lord's ascension. On the day of Pentecost, many who had personally consented to the death of Jesus, received power to believe in his name, and publicly joined themselves to his disciples: a sense of his love and grace to each united the whole body so closely together, that, though they were a multitude of several thousands, it is said (1), they were of one heart and of one soul; neither said any of them, that aught of the things which he possessed was his own, but they had all

(1) Acts, iv. 32.



things common; and they continued stedfastly in the apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. These were happy times indeed! No interfering interests or jarring sentiments, no subtle or factious spirits, no remissness in the means of grace, no instances of a conduct in any respect unbecoming the gospel, were to be found among them; it seemed as if the powerful sense of divine truths, which they had received, had overborne, if not extirpated, every evil disposition in so large an assembly: yet even this (the difference of numbers excepted) is no peculiar case. The like has been observable again and again, when God has been pleased to honour ministers, far inferior to the apostles, with a sudden and signal influence, in places where the power of the gospel had been little known before. In such circumstances, the truth has been often impressed and received with astonishing effects; many, who before were dead in trespasses and sins, having been, like those of old, pierced to the heart, and then filled with comfort, from a believing knowledge of him on whom their sins were laid, find themselves, as it were, in a new world; old things are past away; the objects of time and sense appear hardly worth their notice; the love of Christ constrains them, and they burn in love to all who will join them in praising their Saviour. Here indeed is a striking change wrought; yet the infirmities inseparable from human nature, though for the present overpowered, will, as occasions arise, discover themselves again, so far as to prove two things universally: 1. That the best of men are still liable to mistakes and weaknesses, for which they will have cause to mourn to the end of their lives. 2. That in the best times there will be some intruders, who for a season may make a profession, and yet in the end appear to have neither part nor lot in the matter. Thus



Thus it was in the church of Jerusalem; the pleasing state of things mentioned above did not continue very long; an Ananias and a Sapphira were soon found amongst them, who sought the praise of men, and made their profession a cloke for covetousness and hypocrisy (1); grudgings and murmurings arose in a little time between the Jews and the Hellenists (2); and it was not long before they were thrown into strong debates, and in danger of divisions, upon account of the question first started at Antioch, Whether the law of Moses was still in force to believers, or not?

In these latter times, when it has been attempted to vindicate and illustrate a revival of religion, by appealing to the writings of St Paul, and the delineation he has given us of the faith and practice of a Christian, the attempt has often excited disdain; it has been thought a sufficient answer, to enumerate and exaggerate the faults, mistakes, and inconsistencies (or what the world is pleased to account such) that are charged upon the persons concerned in such an appeal, as necessarily proving, that where these blemishes are found, there can be no resemblance to the first Christians. If the frequency did not lessen the wonder, it might seem very unaccountable, that any person who has read the New Testament should venture upon this method in a Protestant country, where the people have the scripture in their hands, and are at liberty to judge for themselves. But as there are not a few, even among Protestants, who seem to expect their assertions will pass for proofs, I propose, in this chapter, to point out several things, which, though undoubtedly wrong, had a considerable prevalence among the first Christians, leaving the application to the judicious reader. I acknowledge my firm

(1) Acts, vi.

(2) Acts, xv.

persuasion,



persuasion, that a certain system of doctrine, revived of late years, is the doctrine of the Reformation, and of the New Testament; which, though not suited to the general and prevailing taste, is attended, more or less, with the blessing and power of God, in turning sinners from darkness to light: I confess, that both ministers and people who espouse this despised cause, have sufficient ground for humiliation: we have seen, we still see, many things amongst us which we cannot approve; we fear that too many are a real discredit to the cause they profess; and we are conscious, that the best of us fall mournfully short of what might be expected from the sublime principles which, by the grace of God, we have been taught from his word: we desire to be open to conviction, not to contend for errors, or even to *vindicate* any thing that can be proved contrary to the scripture; but if some things not justifiable, which we must own have accompanied what we verily believe to be a work of the Spirit of God, are (as some would represent them) sufficient to discredit this work, to impeach the truth of the doctrines or the sincerity of the instruments in the gross; — then we are sure it will follow, upon the same principles, that the Jews and Heathens had just ground and warrant to reject the doctrine of the apostles, and to treat their persons with contempt.

A competent knowledge and consideration of the present state of man, in himself, and of the circumstances in which he is placed, are necessary to preserve us from being offended with the gospel of Christ, on account of the imperfections that may be found in the conduct of those who have sincerely received it; due allowances must be made for the remains of ignorance and prejudice, the power of habit, temper, and constitution, in different persons. The various combinations of these, and other



ther particulars, make each individual character, though agreeing in one common nature, and influenced by the same general principles, in some respects an original. The power and subtlety of Satan, and his address in suiting his temptations to the peculiar inclinations and situation of every person, must be taken into the account; and likewise the immense variety of occasions arising from without, such as, the provocations and arts of enemies, the influence of mistaken friends, the necessary engagements, connections, and relations of common life, the artifices of seducers, and the scandals of false professors. These things, and others which might be named, concur to make the path of duty exceeding difficult, especially to young beginners, who, so soon as they become sincerely desirous to serve the Lord, find themselves immediately in the midst of scenes, in which they can only be fitted to act their parts aright by a gradual and painful experience. They whose intentions are right, usually set out with warm hearts and sanguine expectations, little aware of the difficulties that are before them; they have indeed a sure rule to act by in the scripture, and they have a sure promise, that the Spirit of God will be their guide and teacher; but at first they have but little acquaintance with the scripture, and till they are humbled, by being left to commit many mortifying mistakes, they are too prone to lean to their own understandings; every day brings them into some new difficulty, wherein they can get little direction from what they have passed through before, and often emergencies are so pressing as hardly to leave room for deliberation: in short, it seems to be the Lord's pleasure, not so much to preserve them from mistakes and indiscretions at first, as to take occasion to humble them upon this account, and to shew them how to correct them when made. Thus they are more confirmed



firmed in a sense of their own weakness and of his goodness, and are trained up, by time, observation, and repeated trials, to a more perfect exercise of every branch of Christian wisdom: by degrees their judgements are formed to greater maturity, they are more jealous of themselves; more acquainted with Satan's devices, more capable of distinguishing the spirit and conduct of mankind, and especially more simply dependent upon God for his teaching and direction: and thus they grow into a participation of the spirit of the gospel, and are enabled to act and speak as becomes the servants of Christ. When his gospel is faithfully preached and cordially received, there always will be some who are able, by the grace of God, to put to silence the ignorance of foolish men, and to demean themselves so, that if any will speak evil of them, the shame is retorted upon themselves; but among the numbers who are forming in the same school, there will likewise be some (for the reasons I have suggested) whose conduct will, in some respects, be liable to censure, though their hearts are sincere; and there will frequently be others, who (like the hearers compared by our Lord to seed sown upon rocky ground) will thrust themselves amongst professors, be called by the same name, and accounted by the world the same people, who at length discover themselves to be mere hypocrites. These indeed will furnish occasion enough for exception; and they who are glad to have it so, will readily suppose or pretend that they are all alike. It remains to shew, that in this sense there is no new thing under the sun. It was so from the beginning.

The Apostle Paul bears an honourable testimony to the sincerity, zeal, and grace of the believers amongst whom he had preached, and to whom he had written; he commends their work of faith and labour



labour of love; he styles them his joy, his glory, and his crown, and expresses his confidence, that the Lord, who had begun a good work in them, would assuredly complete it: but though he knew there were many persons among them who were well established in the truth, and judicious in their conduct, his admonitions upon several occasions shew there were others, whose judgements were weak, and behaviour unwarrantable.

He speaks of the Corinthians (1) as a people enriched in the knowledge of Christ, and honoured with an eminency of gifts: yet he takes notice of many things blameable in them; insomuch, that if the people who now censure appearances of a religious kind, because they are not wholly free from imperfection, could have had opportunity to judge of the Christians at Corinth in the same spirit, it is probable they would have despised and condemned those whom the apostle loved, as much as they can possibly do any set of people now.

They had first received the gospel from St Paul, but it had been confirmed to them afterwards by other ministers. The servants of Christ all preach the same truths; but the Holy Spirit, who furnishes them all for the work he appoints them to, distributes to each one severally, according to his own will: he communicates a diversity of gifts, not all to one person, but each has a talent given him to profit withal; one is favoured with a peculiar insight into the mysteries of the gospel; another has a power and pathos of expression; and another is happy in a facility of applying to distressed and wounded consciences. It is the duty and privilege of Christians to avail themselves of these different talents; to profit by each, to be thankful

(1) 1 Cor. i. 5.



for all, and to esteem every faithful minister very highly for his work's sake. But the Corinthians were unduly influenced by personal attachments, as their several inclinations led them; they formed imprudent comparisons and preferences, were divided into parties, and drawn into contentions upon this account; one saying, I am of Paul; another, I am of Apollos, or I of Cephas (1); they thought it a mark of zeal to be strenuous for their respective favourites: but St Paul assured them, that it was a sign they were weak and low in the Christian life, and a means to keep them so. Disputes and prepossessions of this kind draw the mind away from its proper nourishment, and afford occasion for the various workings of our selfish passions. Where-ever the Lord is pleased to raise up, in or near the same place, ministers who are of eminence in their different gifts, the effects of this spirit will be more or less observable; and it is eagerly observed by the world, and amplified to the utmost, as a weighty objection: the ministers are represented to be artful designing men; who, under the sacred names of Christ, and the gospel, are aiming chiefly or solely to form a party of dependents upon themselves; and the people are accounted silly sheep, carried away captive by the influence of their popular leaders, insomuch that they cannot, or dare not, receive the doctrines they profess to love from any but their own favourites. The disposition is certainly wrong; but let it be censured with candour, not as the peculiarity of this or that party, but as a fault which human nature is always prone to in a similar circumstance: it shewed a want of solid judgement in the Corinthians, but was no impeachment of their sincerity; much less

(1) 1 Cor. i. 12. and iii. 4.



did it prove that Paul, Apollos, or Cephas, were mercenary ambitious men, who prostituted their talents and influence to gain disciples to themselves, rather than to Christ. The same premises will admit of no stronger conclusion now than in the apostles days.

The proper design and tendency of the religion of Jesus is, to wean the affections from the world, to mortify the dictates of self-love, and to teach us (by his example) to be gentle, forbearing, benevolent, and disinterested. This the world is aware of; and though they declare their dislike to the principles which alone can produce such a spirit, they always expect it from the people who profess them; and therefore when, amongst the numbers of these, they can find a few instances of persons too much actuated by selfish, worldly, or angry tempers, it is eagerly objected, These are excellent people, if you would judge of them by the length and frequency of their devotions, and by what they have to say of their persuasion of God's love to them; but touch them in their property, and they shew themselves as unwilling to forego, and as anxious to grasp, the good things of this world, as if they had no better claim to heaven than ourselves. It is much to be lamented, that such occasions of reproach are afforded to those who seek them. But what would they have said of the Corinthians, whom the apostle reproves in the following terms (1): "Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because you go to law one with another: why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your brethren." And,

(1) 1 Cor. vi. 7. 8.



in the preceding chapter, he speaks of an enormity among them hardly to be heard of among the Heathens; which, though the fault of one person, brought dishonour upon them all, because they had not explicitly disowned it, and proceeded against the offender. This is not to be wondered at; for we have often seen, in our own time, that though evil practices have been censured in the strongest terms of disallowance, and the offenders publicly and notoriously disclaimed, yet many will still be so destitute of candour and equity as to insist on it, They are all alike.

The irregularities in the public worship at Corinth were such, as if practised amongst ourselves, would excite a greater clamour than any thing of that nature which has been hitherto complained of. It appears that, far from conducting their assemblies with decency and order, they were sometimes in the greatest confusion: different persons had a psalm, a doctrine, a tongue, a revelation, an interpretation, many speaking together, and sometimes in different languages; so that the apostle thought it very probable, that, if an unbeliever came in amongst them, he would of course say, They were mad (1). And this want of decorum extended to their celebration of the Lord's supper; where, says the apostle, Every one taketh before another; and one is hungry, and another is drunken (2). I apprehend that these instances of disorder cannot be paralleled by the most irregular proceedings in our time, amongst any people that hold the principles which I am at present engaged to vindicate.

Many of the Corinthians, as well as the Gala-

(1) 1 Cor. xiv. 23.

(2) 1 Cor. xi. 21.

tians,



tians \*, had discovered great unsteadiness towards St Paul, and had been seduced by false teachers and pretended apostles. Inexperienced minds are very liable to such deceptions; meaning well themselves, they are too apt to listen to the fair words and fine speeches of those who lie in wait to deceive. The love of Christ, and the love of holiness, are the leading properties of a gracious heart; and such an one, till experience has made him wise, conceives a good opinion of all who profess a regard for Jesus, or for sanctification: he is not aware, at first, that there are those in the world who attempt to divide what God has joined together. When the blood and righteousness of Christ are recommended, not as the source, but as a substitute for vital experimental religion; or when some other spirit is preached than that whose office it is to testify of Jesus; in either case the food of the soul is poisoned, and the evil begins to operate before it is perceived. Faithful ministers are accounted too low or too high, too strict or too remiss, according to the scheme newly adopted; they are first disregarded, and at length considered as enemies, because they persist in the truth, and refuse to suit themselves to the new taste of their hearers. Thus error, once admitted, makes

\* Yet he says of the Galatians, that, when he first went among them, they received him as an angel of God, and, if possible, would have plucked out their own eyes to have given them to him, Gal. iv. 15. Great is the power of the gospel: it subdues and possesses the heart, and conciliates a tenderness and relation between ministers and people, nearer and dearer than the ties of flesh and blood. But, alas! how great likewise is the inconstancy of mortals! the apostle experienced it to his grief; and where he had the greatest prospect, he was most disappointed: those who once would have plucked out their own eyes for his service, afterwards accounted him their enemy, for telling them the truth. We need not therefore wonder if there are instances of this kind at present.



an alarming progress; and no power but that of God can stop it. Hence proceed divisions, subdivisions, distinctions, refinements, bitterness, strife \*, envyings, and by degrees enthusiasm, in the worst sense of the word; an evil to be dreaded and guarded against no less earnestly than the beginning of a fire or a pestilence. Such trying circumstances will demonstrate who are indeed upon the right foundation; for others, having once begun, depart from the truth, grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived; and many who are built upon the rock, and therefore cannot be totally or finally drawn away, yet suffer unspeakable loss: the wood, hay, and stubble (1), the unadvised additions they have admitted to the scriptural truths they once received, are burnt up in the time of temptation; they lose much of their comfort and stability, and have in a manner all to begin again. The world, that knows not the weakness of man, or the power and devices of Satan, laughs at those things, and expects to see them issue in a universal confusion, like that of Babel. In the same light it is most probable the Heathens beheld and derided the primitive Christians; for they likewise had their shaking and sifting times; many amongst them, who seemed to begin in the spirit, were stopped short in their course by the arts of false teachers, to their great hindrance, and some to their final overthrow.

\* That bitterness and strife were too frequent in the primitive churches, appears from James, iii. 14.; Gal. v. 15.; and other texts. Our Lord's admonition, Math. vii. 3.—5. has always been too little regarded; and few are yet sufficiently convinced of the folly and absurdity of pointing out, and in an angry spirit condemning, the mistakes and faults of others, while we indulge greater in ourselves. Reformation (like modern charity) should begin at home!

(1) 1 Cor. iii. 10.—15.



St Paul addresses no one church in terms of greater tenderness and approbation than the Thessalonians; he commends their work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus; and mentions them as a pattern to the other churches in Macedonia and Greece. Yet even among these he understood there were some who walked disorderly, and were busy bodies, not working at all: he strongly disapproved their conduct, declaring, that if any would not work, neither should he eat (1). When persons are newly awakened to a concern for their souls, and deeply impressed with the importance of eternity, it is no wonder (considering the animal frame) if their attention is so engaged and engrossed for a season, that they cannot attend to the affairs of common life with their usual alacrity and freedom \*: if their concern is of a right kind, they are gradually brought to peace and hope in believing: they recover their spirits, and their civil callings being now sanctified by a desire to glorify God in them, their diligence is not less, but frequently greater than before; for now they act not to please men, or to please themselves, but what they do, they do heartily as to the Lord. However, amongst a

\* See James, iv. 9. The word *καταρση*, rendered *beavings*, answers nearest to *dejection*; the derivation importing a downcast countenance; and it expresses that kind of sorrow which sinks the spirits and fixes the eyes upon the earth. Something of this is usually discernible when a real conviction of sin takes place in the heart. The inspired apostle recommends this temper and demeanour, as most suitable to the case of sinners who are destitute of faith and love, and cannot therefore rejoice upon good grounds; and yet when any person begins to be impressed in this manner, and to see the propriety of the apostle's advice, it frequently happens, that all who know him, both friends and enemies, will agree to pronounce him disordered in his senses. So different, so opposite, are the Spirit of God, and the spirit of the world!

(1) 2 Thess. iii. 10. 11.



number of people, natural temper, indiscretion, or inadvertence, may cause some to deviate from the general rule; and though we cannot justify any who are remiss in the discharge of the relative duties of society, we may justify the doctrines and principles they acknowledge from the charge of leading them into this mistake, unless it can be proved that St Paul's preaching was justly chargeable with the same fault.

But these are small things, compared to what he says in another place. He complains to the Philippians in this affecting language (1) —. "Many walk, (not some only, but many), of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are enemies of the cross of Christ \*: Whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, who mind earthly things." St Paul had occasion to express himself thus, and that again and again, even in the golden days of primitive Christianity. Could their worst enemies have given them a worse character? Can even malice itself desire to fix a harsher imputation upon any denomination of people now subsisting? Yet these are the words of truth and soberness, the words of an inspired apostle, the words, not of resentment, but grief: he spoke of it weeping; he would willingly have hoped better things; but he knew what tempers and practices were inconsistent with a sincere acceptance of the gospel; and unless he would shut his eyes, and stop his ears, he could not but be sensible that many who were reputed Christians, dishonoured the name of Christianity, and caused the ways of truth to be evil spoken of.

\* What disagreeable things the apostle was apprehensive of meeting, when he should revisit Corinth, we may learn from 2 Cor. xii. 20. 21.

(1) Phil. iii. 18. 19.

Now



Now what is the consequence? Shall the apostle bear the blame \* of the evils and abominations he lamented? for if he had not preached, these evils would not have appeared under the Christian name. Shall the wickedness of his pretended followers be charged as the necessary effect of that pure and heavenly doctrine which he had delivered? By no means. The grace of God, which he preached, taught and enabled those who received it in their hearts to deny all ungodliness and worldly lusts, and to live soberly, righteously, and godly, in the present world. If inquiry was made concerning the tendency of his doctrine, he could appeal to the tempers and lives of multitudes (1), who had been thereby delivered from the love and power of sin, and filled with the fruits of righteousness which are by Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God. But it was likewise true, that they were still encumbered with a depraved nature; they were in a world full of temptations and snares; and as their numbers were very great, some instances had occurred of persons sincerely well disposed, who had too visibly declined from the rule by which they professed and desired to walk. Against their mistakes and faults he watchfully directed his exhortations and admonitions, as occa-

\* The Apostle knew that some did or would presume to infer a liberty to sin from the doctrine which he preached, Rom. vi. 1.; yet he would not suppress or disguise the truths of God to prevent such a poor disingenuous perversion: he knew likewise, that no one, who had tasted that the Lord is gracious, can either form such a conclusion himself, or listen to it if proposed by others; therefore he thought it unnecessary to refute it at large. Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound? God forbid! This is a sufficient answer. This absurd blasphemy exposes and confutes itself; the terms are inconsistent, impossible, and contradictory, in the highest degree.

(1) 2 Cor. iii. 2. 3.



sions offered; and they were generally attended with a good effect, to convince, humble, and restore the offenders (1), and to increase their circumspection for the time to come. It was true likewise, that there were some gathered by the preaching of the gospel into the number of professors, who were not effectually called and changed by the Spirit of God. These, though for a time they had a name to live, were no better than dead: and one reason why the Lord permitted the offences and divisions we have mentioned to take place was, that by the means of such heresies, those that were approved might be made manifest, and the chaff separated from the wheat; for tho' the ignorant world would call even those persons Christians, whose conduct proved them enemies to the cross of Christ, yet time, the test of truth, unanswerably evinced the difference. Thus St John, who lived some years after the rest of the apostles, and saw many turn their backs upon the teachers and doctrines they had once owned, has observed to this purpose. — "They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us (2)." In a word, there were too many pretenders; some things amiss where the heart and views were right in the main, and imperfections in the best; the scorers and cavillers, who hated the light of the gospel, and were always in search of something to confirm their prejudices against it, met with much answerable to their wishes, even in the first and best churches; but to men of candour, who were ingenuous seekers of the truth, the spirituality, humility, and brotherly love, that prevailed a-

(1) 2 Cor. vii. 9.

(2) 1 John, ii. 19.

among

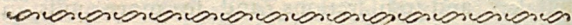


mong the Christians, and the powerful effects of their public ordinances, demonstrated, that the truth was on their side, and that God was assuredly with them.

We offer the same apology, the same train of reasoning, in behalf of what is now so generally deemed the foolishness of preaching. The doctrines we defend, which some (who cannot do it ignorantly) have the effrontery to misrepresent as novel opinions, are, we doubt not, the doctrines of Christ and his apostles; and in substance the doctrines taught from the word of God by Wickliffe, Luther, and the venerable reformers of our own church. We preach Christ crucified, Christ the end of the law for righteousness, and the power of God for sanctification, to every one that believeth: we preach salvation by grace through faith in his blood; and we are sure, that they who receive this doctrine unfeignedly, will, by their lives and conversations, demonstrate it to be a doctrine according to godliness; they are not indeed delivered from infirmities, they are liable to mistakes and indiscretions, and see more amiss in themselves than their worst enemies can charge them with: but sin is their burden; they sigh to be delivered from it, and they expect a complete redemption. We cannot indeed say so much for all who outwardly avow a belief of this doctrine; there are pretenders, who, while they profess to believe in God, in works they deny him. But it has been so from the beginning. The miscarriages of such persons are charged indiscriminately upon the societies among whom they are mixed, and upon the truths which they seem to approve: but there is a righteous God, who in due time will vindicate his own gospel and his own people from all aspersions. St Paul observed such things in his day; and he spoke of them likewise, but he spoke  
of



of them *weeping*. The true state of the mind may be determined from the temper with which the miscarriages of professors are observed: The profane expatiate on them with delight, the self-righteous with disdain; but they who know themselves, and love the Lord, cannot speak of them without the sincerest emotions of grief: they are concerned for the honour of the gospel, which is defamed under this pretence; they are grieved for the unhappy and dangerous state of those by whom such offences come; and they fear for themselves, lest the enemy should gain an advantage over them likewise; for they know they have no strength nor goodness of their own; therefore, avoiding unnecessary reflections on others, they endeavour to maintain a watchful jealousy over themselves, and to fix their hearts and hopes upon Christ Jesus their Lord, who, they are persuaded, is able to keep them from falling, to save them to the uttermost, and at length to present them faultless before the presence of his glory, with exceeding joy.



#### C H A P. IV.

*Of the heresies propagated by false teachers in the apostles days.*

THE parables in the thirteenth chapter of St Matthew are prophetic of the reception and event of the gospel in succeeding ages. In this view our Lord himself has explained them. Wherever it is preached, the hearers may be classed according to the distribution in the parable of the sower: some hear without understanding or reflection; in some it excites a hasty emotion in the natural



natural affections, and produces an observable and sudden change in their conduct, resembling the effects of a real conversion to God ; but the truth not being rooted in the heart, nor the soul united to Christ by a living faith, these hopeful appearances are sooner or later blasted, and come to nothing : others are really convinced in their judgement of the truth and importance of what they hear ; but their hearts cleave to the dust, and the love of this world, the care of what they have, the desire of what they have not, the calls of business, or the sollicitations of pleasure, choak the word which they seem to receive, so that it brings forth no fruit to perfection : a part, however, (usually the smallest part), who are compared to the good ground, are disposed and enabled, by divine grace, to receive it thankfully, as life from the dead. And though they meet with many difficulties, and, like the corn upon the ground, pass through a succession of trying and changing seasons ; yet, having the love, promise, and power of God engaged on their behalf, in defiance of frosts, and blasts, and storms, they are brought to maturity, and, when fully ripe, are safely gathered into his garner (1). This is an epitome of the ecclesiastical history of every nation, and of every parish, to which this word of salvation is sent.

But the parable of the tares (2) teaches us farther to expect, that besides the general influence which Satan, as the god of this world, will exert to blind the eyes of mankind, lest the light of the glorious gospel should shine upon them (3), he will take occasion, from the knowledge of the truth, to insinuate a variety of errors. His first attempts

(1) Matth. iii. 12.

(3) 2 Cor. iv. 4.

(2) Matth. xiii. 25. 28.



in this way are often so specious and unsuspected, that they are compared to a man's sowing seed by stealth, and in the night, but, as the corn grew, a large crop of tares springing up with it, demonstrated that an enemy had been there. This, in fact, has been universally the case, in every country and age where the gospel has been received; and we may remark, that the sowing the good seed was the occasion of the tares being cast into the same ground. When a people are involved in gross darkness and ignorance, sleeping in a false peace, and buried in the pleasures and pursuits of the world, they have neither leisure nor inclination to invent or attend to novelties in religion; each one is satisfied with that form (if even the form of godliness is retained) which he has received from his parents, and neither pretends nor desires to be wiser than those who went before him; but when the truth has shone forth and been received, and seems to bid fair for farther success, Satan employs all his power and subtilty, either to suppress or counterfeit it, or both. Much has been done in the former way; he has prevailed so far as to enkindle the fiercest animosities against the nearest relatives, and persuaded men that they might do acceptable service to God, by punishing his faithful servants with torture, fire, and sword (1): and no less industrious and successful has he been in practising upon the passions and prejudices of mankind to admit and propagate, instead of the gospel of Christ, and under that name, an endless diversity of opinions, utterly incompatible with it. Of these some are ingenious and artful, adapted to gratify the pride of those who are wise in their own conceits; others more gross and extravagant, suited to inflame the imaginations, or to gratify the

(1) John, xvi. 2.

appetites,



appetites, of such persons as have not a turn for speculation and refinement.

As these appearances have always accompanied the gospel, so they have always been a stumbling-block and offence to the world, and have furnished those who hated the light with a pretext for rejecting it; and the doctrines of truth have been charged as the source and cause of those errors which have only sprung from their abuse and perversion. When Popery, for a series of ages, detained mankind in darkness and bondage, and deprived them of the knowledge of the holy scriptures, the tide of error ran uniformly in one great channel; when dead works were substituted in the place of living faith; and the worship and trust which is only due to Jesus the great Mediator, was blasphemously directed to subordinate intercessors, to angels and to saints, whether real or pretended; when forgiveness of sin was expected, not by the blood of Christ, but by penances, pilgrimages, masses, and human absolutions, by the repetition of many prayers, or the payment of sums of money: — while things continued thus, the world was generally in that state of stupidity and blind security which is miscalled religious peace and uniformity; and the controversies of the times were chiefly confined to those points which immediately affected the power, wealth, or pre-eminence, of the several religious orders by whom the people were implicitly led. Some differences of opinion were indeed known; but the charge of heresy and dangerous innovations was seldom so much as pretended against any, but the few who refused to wear the mark of the beast upon their right hands and foreheads, and who, by the mercy of God, retained and professed the main truths of Christianity in some degree of power and purity. But when it pleased God to revive the knowledge of the go-



spel, by the ministry of Luther and his associates, and many were turned from darkness to light, the enemy of mankind presently changed his methods, and, by his influence, the sowing of the good seed was followed by tares in abundance. In the course of a few years, the glory of the Reformation was darkened, and its progress obstructed, by the enthusiasm and infatuation of men, who, under a pretence of improving upon Luther's plan, propagated the wildest, most extravagant, and blasphemous opinions, and perpetrated, under the mask of religion, such acts of cruelty, villainy, and licentiousness, as have been seldom heard of in the world. The Papists beheld these excesses with pleasure: many of them could not but know, that Luther, and the heads of the Reformation, did all that could be expected from them, to show the folly and iniquity of such proceedings; but, against the light of truth and fact, they laboured to persuade the world, that these were the necessary consequences of Luther's doctrine; and that no better issue could be justly hoped for when men presumed to depart from the authorised standards of popes and councils, and to read and examine the scripture for themselves.

This religious madness was, however, of no long duration: the people who held tenets inconsistent with the peace of society, were deservedly treated as rebels and incendiaries by the governing powers; the ringleaders were punished, and the multitudes dispersed; their most obnoxious errors were gradually abandoned, and are now in a manner forgot. After the peace of Passau, the Reformation acquired an establishment in Germany, and other places; and since that time, error has assumed a milder form, and has been supported by softer methods, and more respectable names.

In



In our own country, the same spirit of enthusiasm and disorder has appeared at different times, though it has been restrained, by the providence of God, from proceeding to the same extremities, and has been most notorious, when, or soon after, the power of gospel-truth has been most eminently revived: for, as I have already observed, when religion is upon the decline, and only so much of a profession retained as is consistent with the love of the present world, and a conformity to the maxims and practices of the many, we seldom hear of any errors prevailing, but such as will find a favourable toleration, and may be avowed without exciting very strong and general expressions of contempt and ill-will against those who maintain them. But whenever real religion, as a life of faith in the Son of God, is set forth upon the principles of scripture, and, by the operation of the Holy Spirit, witnesses are raised up, who by their conduct demonstrate that they are crucified with Christ, to the law, to sin, and to the world, then is the time for Satan to discredit this work, by imposing a variety of false views and appearances upon the minds of the ignorant and unwary; and he is seldom at a loss for fit instruments to promote his designs. Since the late revival of the Reformation-doctrines amongst us, we have perhaps fewer things of this kind to apologize for, than have been observable on any similar occasion; and the best apology we can offer for what has been really blameable, is, to shew that it was even thus in the apostles days; and that, if any arguments taken from these blemishes are conclusive against what some chuse to call the novel doctrines now, they would, with equal reason, conclude against the validity of the New Testament.

And not to confine myself to such things as the world is most prone to except against, I shall endeavour



deavour to shew, that the seeds of all errors and heresies, the fashionable as well as those which are more generally despised, were sown in the first age, and appeared so early as to give occasion for the apostles censures against them. I do not mean by this to parallel every name and every singularity that a subtle head or a warm imagination may have started; but to assign, in general, the principles to which all these delusions may be reduced, the sources to which these inebriating and dangerous streams may be traced; for indeed the operations of the human mind seem to be much more simple and limited than we are ordinarily aware. As there can be no new truths, though every truth appears new to us which we have not known before, so it is probable that there can be now no new errors; at least it is certain, that a competent knowledge of antiquity, or even a careful perusal of the apostles writings, will furnish sufficient evidence, that some modern authors and teachers are by no means the inventors of the ingenious schemes they have presented to the public. Truth, like the sun, maintains a constant course; every thing would stagnate and die if we were deprived of it for a single day: but errors are like comets; which, though too excentric to be subject exactly to our computations, yet have their periods of approach and recess, and some of them have appeared and been admired, have been withdrawn and forgot, over and over again.

Error, in the simplest form, is a misapprehension of the truth. Some part of the gospel must be known before any erroneous conceptions of it can take place. Thus we read (1), that Simon Magus was struck with Philip's preaching, and the effects which attended it: he was so far impressed,

(1) Acts, viii. 9.—22.

that



that it is said he believed; that is, he made a profession of faith: he was convinced there was something extraordinary in the doctrine, but he understood it not; and the event shewed he had no part nor lot in the matter. He is thought by the ancients to have been the founder of that capital sect, which is known in general by the name of the *Gnostics*, and which, like a gangrene, spread far and wide, in various branches and subdivisions, each successive head refining upon the system of the preceding. In Sir Peter King's History of the apostle's creed, and Mosheim's Ecclesiastical History, the English reader may see the substance of the figments which these unhappy men, wise in their own conceit, vented under the name of the Christian religion.

The doctrine of Jesus Christ, and of him crucified, which St Paul preached, and in which he gloried, is the pillar and ground of truth, the rock upon which the church is built, and against which the gates of hell shall never prevail (1). Mistakes in this point are fundamental, dangerous, and, if persisted in, destructive; for as such a knowledge of God as is connected with his favour and communion is eternal life, so none can come to the Father but by the Son (2), nor can any know him, but those to whom the Son will reveal him (3). On this account Satan's great endeavour (and on his success herein the strength of his kingdom depends) is to darken and pervert the minds of men, lest they should acknowledge and understand what the scripture declares of his person, characters, and offices, as well knowing that if these are set aside, whatever else is left of religion will be utterly unavailing. Jesus Christ is revealed in the

(1) 1 Cor. ii. 2.; Gal. vi. 14.; 1 Tim. iii. 15.; Matth. xvi. 18.

(2) John, xvii. 3. and xiv. 6.

(3) Matth. xi. 27.

scripture,



scripture, and was preached by his first disciples, as God manifest in the flesh, a divine person in the human nature, who, by submitting to ignominy, pain, and death, made a full and proper atonement for sin, and wrought out an everlasting righteousness in favour of all who should believe in his name; and he is set forth in that nature in which he suffered, as the object of our supreme love, trust, and adoration. Other important doctrines, largely insisted on in the word of God, such as the demerit of sin, the obnoxiousness of sinners to punishment, and the misery and incapacity of man in his fallen state, are closely connected with this, and cannot be satisfactorily explained without it. The necessary method of our recovery exhibits the most striking view of the ruin in which sin has involved us, and is the only adequate standard whereby to estimate the unspeakable love of God manifested in our redemption. On the other hand, a knowledge of the true state of mankind, in consequence of the fall, is necessary to obviate the prejudices of our minds against a procedure, which, though in itself the triumph of Divine Wisdom, is in many respects contradictory to our natural (and therefore false) notions of the fitness of things. St Paul declares (1), that the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, neither can he discern them; and in another place (2), That no man can say (that is, sincerely, and upon solid conviction) that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. To worship him who had been hanged upon a cross, and to expect eternal happiness from his death, was to the Jews a stumbling block: it offended their notions of the unity of the godhead, and opposed their high esteem of their own righteousness; and to the Greeks or Heathens, it ap-

(1) 1 Cor. ii. 14.

(2) 1 Cor. xii. 3.

peared



peared the greatest folly and absurdity imaginable. For these reasons the gospel was rejected by multitudes as soon as proposed, and those who preached it were accounted babblers and madmen, not because they were at a loss for propriety of expression, or discovered any thing ridiculous in their conduct, but because they enforced tenets which were adjudged inconsistent with the common sense of mankind.

But notwithstanding these prejudices, the energy of their preaching, and the miraculous powers with which it was accompanied, made an impression upon many persons, so far as to induce them to profess the name of Jesus, though they were not spiritually enlightened into the mysteries of his religion, nor their hearts thoroughly subdued to the obedience of the faith. There are other points within the compass of the gospel-ministry more adapted to affect the minds of men in their natural state. Few are so hardened but they have a conscience of sin, some fears with respect to its consequences, and a pre-intimation of immortality. Such are capable of being greatly affected and moved by a pathetic declaration of the terrors of the Lord, the solemnities of a future judgement, the joys of heaven, or the torments of hell. We cannot doubt that these topics, when insisted on with that strength of argument and warmth of spirit, of which the apostles were capable, would engage the attention of many who were not partakers of that divine light, by which alone the whole scheme of truth, in its harmony and beauty, can be perceived. The seed sown upon the rock sprang up immediately, the quickness of its growth, and the suddenness of its decay, proceeding from the same cause, a want of depth in the soil. Not a few of these hasty believers presently renounced the faith altogether, and others, who went not so far as to disown the name, endeavoured



endeavoured to accommodate the doctrine to their prepossessions, and to explain or reject what they could not understand, in such a manner as to form a system upon the whole agreeable to their own wills. Men of corrupt and prejudiced minds thus tampered with the truth; and their inventions, when made known, were adopted by others of the same cast of thought: as they were differently inclined, they directed their inquiries to different points, and each found partizans and adherents in their respective ways. Thus errors, and, in consequence, sects and divisions, were multiplied; for when men depart from the unerring guidance of God's word, there is no end of their imaginations; one singularity produces another, and every new leader is stimulated to carry his discoveries farther than those who have gone before him. Farther, as human nature is universally the same, we may judge from what we have seen, that there always have been persons inclined to join in a religious profession, from the unworthy motives of worldly interest, and a desire to stand fair with their fellow creatures. Temptations to this were not so strong indeed at first, nor so general as they have often been since; yet the force of friendship, relation, (and when Christianity had been of some years standing), education, custom, and human authority, is very considerable; nor is even persecution a sufficient bar against hypocrites and intruders. They who suffer for the gospel, though despised by the world, are highly esteemed and considered by their own side; it procures them an attention which they would not have otherwise obtained; it may give them an importance in their own eyes, furnish them with something to talk of, and make them talked of by others. There are people who, for the sake of these advantages, will for a season venture upon many hardships, though, when the trial



trial comes very close, they will not endure to the end. In a word, there is no reason to doubt but that amongst the numbers who professed the gospel at first, there would be found the same variety of tempers, circumstances, views, and motives, as have ordinarily appeared amongst a great number of people, suddenly formed in any other period of time; and the apostles writings prove that it was really so. From these general principles, we may easily account for the early introduction and increase of errors and heresies, and that they should be in a manner the same as have sprung up with, or followed, succeeding revivals of the truth. Nor is it just cause of surprise, if sincere Christians have been in some instances entangled in the prevailing errors of the times: designing no harm themselves, they suspect none, and are therefore liable to be imposed on by those who lie in wait to deceive (1).

When Christianity first appeared, the Heathen wisdom, known by the name of *Philosophy*, was in the highest repute: it had two principal branches, the Grecian and the Eastern. The former admitted (at least did not condemn) a multiplicity and subordination of deities; amongst whom, as agents and mediators between their supreme Jupiter and mortals, the care and concerns of mankind were subdivided, to each of which homage and sacrifices were due: their mythology, or the pretended history of their divinities, was puerile and absurd, and many of their religious rites inconsistent with the practice of public decorum and good morals. Some of the philosophers endeavoured to guard against the worst abuses, and to form a system of religion and morality, in which they seem to have proceeded as far as could be expected from men who were totally ignorant of the true God, and of

(1) Ephes. iv. 14.

their



their own state: some truths they were acquainted with, truths in theory, but utterly impracticable upon any principles but those of revelation. Amongst a vast number of opinions concerning the chief good of man, a few held, that man's honour and happiness must consist in conformity to and communion with God; but how to attain these desirable ends, they were entirely ignorant.

The Eastern philosophy was solemn and mysterious, not less fabulous than the other; but the fables were of a graver cast. It seemed to mourn under the sense of moral evil, and laboured in vain to account for its entrance: its precepts were gloomy and severe; and a perfect course of bodily mortification was recommended as the great expedient to purify the soul from all its defilements, and to reunite it, by degrees, to its great author.

St Paul, in several passages (1), cautions the Christians against corrupting the simplicity of their faith, by admitting the reasonings and inventions of vain men. In some places (2) he seems to speak more directly of the Gnostics, whose heresies were little more than the fables of the Eastern philosophy in a new dress, with an acknowledgement of Jesus Christ as an extraordinary person, yet so as utterly to exclude and deny all the important truths revealed in scripture concerning him. They dignified their scheme with the name of *Gnosis*, or *Science*; but it was falsely so called, and stood in direct opposition to the gospel. On other occasions (3), he appears to have had the Grecian philosophy chiefly in view. But, notwithstanding his admonitions, it was not long before the errors of philosophy had an ill influence upon the professors of the Christian faith; and even several of the fa-

(1) Col. ii. 8.; 1 Tim. vi. 20. (2) 1 Tim. i. 4.; Tit. iii. 9.  
 (3) Rom. i. 21. — 23.; 1 Cor. i. 20. — 23.

thers



thers darkened the glory of the truth, by endeavouring to accommodate it to the taste and genius of that Heathen wisdom which they had before admired, and still thought might be useful to embellish and recommend the gospel.

But, to confine myself to the apostles times, it is plain, from the epistles of St Paul, John, Jude, and Peter (1), that many false prophets and teachers had, in their days, crept in, who propagated damnable heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them, turning the grace of God into licentiousness, speaking great swelling words of vanity, boasting themselves of freedom while they were in bondage to their own lusts. And in the epistle to the church of Ephesus (2), our Lord himself mentions a sect who bore the name of *Nicolaitans*, and expresses his disapprobation of them in these awful terms: "Whom I also hate." The peculiar tenets of the people condemned in these passages of scripture are not expressly mentioned; but from these sources were most probably derived the sects which, in the second century, were known by the names of their several leaders, Cerinthus, Saturninus, Cerdo, Marcion, Basilides, Valentinus, and others; who all building upon the common foundation of the Eastern philosophy, or Gnosis, superadded their own peculiarities, and were differently, though equally, remote from the truth. The one thing in which they all agreed was, in perverting and opposing the scripture-doctrine concerning the person of Christ. On this point their opinions were as discordant as absurd: some denied that Christ was come in the flesh; they pretended that Christ was sent from heaven by the supreme God, and united

(1) Tit. i. 10.; 1 John, iv. 1.; 2 Pet. xxi. 18. 19.; Jude, 4.

(2) Rev. ii. 6.



himself to Jesus, the son of Joseph and Mary, at his baptism; and that, when the Jews apprehended the man Jesus, and nailed him to the cross, Christ returned to heaven, and left him to suffer by himself. Others ascribed a heavenly derivation to his body, affirming that it passed through the Virgin Mary, without any participation of her substance; while others asserted, that he had no substantial flesh; but that his body was a mere phantom, or apparition, which was neither really born, nor did or could truly suffer. Again, there were others who held the reality of his human nature, yet maintained, that Christ did not suffer at all, but that Simon of Cyrene, the bearer of his cross, being taken by the Jews for him, was crucified in his stead, while he stood by, and laughed at their mistake. A brief recital of these extravagancies is sufficient for my present purpose: for a more particular account, I refer the reader to Sir Peter King's History of the Creed, already mentioned. Many passages in the apostles writings are directed against these dangerous errors; for they strike at the root of the faith and hope of the gospel, and are subversive of the whole tenor both of the Old and New Testament. It was believed by the ancients, that St John wrote his gospel with some view to these heresies; and it is certain, that in his first epistle, where, putting the disciples upon their guard against the many false prophets who were gone out into the world, he observes, that the common point, in which all their divers opinions agreed, was a denial that Jesus Christ was come in the flesh (1). He reminds them, that as they had heard Antichrist must come, even so now there were many Antichrists; and that the name was applicable to all who denied that Jesus is the Christ. He

(1) 1 John, ii. 22. and iv. 3.

admits



admits that these false teachers went out from amongst themselves, that is, they had borne the Christian name; but he refers to the doctrines they taught, as a sufficient proof, that they had never been of the number of true Christians; for if they had been of us, no doubt they would have continued with us (1). If opinions, equally wild and extravagant, were at this time maintained and propagated by persons who for a season had been warm for truth and reformation, we are not afraid that they would prejudice our cause with any who will allow due weight to the reasoning of St John; for if they had been really of us once, they would have still continued with us.

But the truth is, the teachers in our time, whose leading tenets most nearly symbolize with these ancient heresies, are not charged, or even suspected, of having had any attachment to the doctrines which I am concerned to vindicate; nor is an apology expected from them, for they give but little offence. Since the fabulous disguise, under which the Gnostics of old veiled their opinions, has been laid aside, their opposition to the deity and atonement of Christ has been adopted by so many who are applauded for ingenuity, fine reasoning, and great learning, that it bids fair to be the fashionable divinity of the age; and though the sufferings of Jesus are not denied, yet their proper causes and ends are openly exploded; and the attempt has often proved an easy path to acceptance, wealth, and dignity.

The attachment of the Jewish converts to the law of Moses was another source of error, which occasioned daily disputes in the churches, and gave rise, in the issue, to dangerous heresies, subversive of the true faith. Even those of them who had

(1) 1 John, ii. 19.



sincerely received the gospel, could not easily be persuaded, that a law given to Moses by God himself, with so much solemnity, from Mount Sinai, was to be entirely abrogated; and that their obligation to it was, *ipso facto*, vacated the moment they believed in Jesus, who, by his obedience unto death, had accomplished all its types and ceremonies, and wrought out for his people an everlasting righteousness commensurate to its utmost requirements. The apostles, who, after the pattern of their Lord, were gentle and tender to the weak of the flock, bore with their infirmities (1), and allowed them to retain a distinction of meats and days, and other observances, provided they did not consider these things in such a point of view as to interfere with God's appointed method of justification by faith in his Son. But the matter was carried much farther; for no sooner was there a church formed at Antioch, than they were troubled with perverse teachers (2), who told them, that except they were circumcised, and kept the law of Moses, they could not be saved. The Galatians were greatly hurt by teachers of this sort (3); and as the Jews were dispersed through all the provinces, the peace of the church was more or less affected by their attempts to enforce the observance of the law, in almost every place, till after the epistle to the Hebrews was received, and obedience to the Levitical law rendered impracticable by the destruction of Jerusalem and the temple (4). From that period, it is probable, the distinction of Jew and Gentile believers ceased, and both parties were firmly incorporated into one body; but a great number of the zealots for the law separated them-

(1) Rom. xiv. 2. — 6.

(2) Acts, xv. 1.

(3) Gal. v. 4.

(4) Col. ii. 16.; Tit. 1. 10.; Phil. iii. 2.; 1 Tim. i. 7.

selves,



selves, and were known in the following age by the name of *Ebionites*, adopting for their rule a mixture of law and gospel, so very different from the gospel St Paul preached, that they openly expressed an abhorrence both of his person and writings.

We have an account likewise of some pretended teachers, who opposed the important doctrine of the Resurrection. Some expressly maintained, that there was no resurrection (1), whom St Paul confutes at large, in his first epistle to the Corinthians. Others affirmed the resurrection is past already (2). Perhaps they pretended, that a moral change was designed by the metaphorical expression of a resurrection. The philosophers had used the word in this sense; and this would be sufficient to gain it admittance with some, who would willingly reconcile their profession to the wisdom of the world. In either way, the very foundations of hope were removed. If this point is denied, the whole system of Christian doctrine falls to the ground; and that dreadful train of consequences must be admitted, which the apostle enumerates (3), "If there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith also vain, ye are yet in your sins; then they also who are fallen asleep in Christ are perished." Since the fertile *resurrection* of ancient mistakes, which is the sin and scandal of the present age, we have been gravely told, that the word signifies no more than the soul's awaking from the long sleep into which they suppose the period we call death will plunge it; and that the body has no share in the revival, but dies without hope: but we may thank God for the scripture, which brings comfort where

(1) 1 Cor. xv. 12.

(2) 2 Tim. ii. 18.

(3) 1 Cor. xv. 14. — 18.



philosophy gives up the cause as desperate. Faith in Christ is so closely connected with the doctrine of a resurrection, that it is common with those who oppose the former to use all their address to explain the latter quite away; and whether they say, It is past already, or, It will never come, their motives, their design, and their manner of reasoning, are the same.

That there were persons who abused the doctrines of grace, as an encouragement to continue in the practice of sin, may be inferred from the epistle of St James, and several passages of the other apostles. Such, in our modern phrase, are styled *Antinomians*; a name, it must be confessed, of very indeterminate application: it is an epithet which many would fix, indiscriminately, upon all who preach a free salvation by faith in the blood of Jesus. If it is all of grace, and we can do nothing of ourselves; if it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy; then we may live as we please, endeavours are useless, and obedience unnecessary (1). These are the inferences which the unenlightened heart charges as unavoidable consequences from the gospel-doctrine; and from hence we obtain a corroborating proof, that we do not mistake St Paul's sense, or preach a gospel different from his, because he foresaw that the same objections would seem to lie against himself (2); and he guards and protests against such a perversion (3), "Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid!" It seems to have been upon this account that he was slandered, and by some affirmed to have taught, "Let us do evil, that good may

(1) Rom. xi. 6.; 2 Cor. iii. 5.; Rom. ix. 16.

(2) Rom. iii. 7. and ix. 19.

(3) Rom. vi. 1.

"come



“ come (1) ;” — that is, in modern language, (and such things are not spoken in corners amongst us), If any man would be a proper subject of what *they* call grace, let him become still more vile, and plunge into the most atrocious wickedness; for the greater the sinner, the better qualified for mercy. We are content to be reproached, as St Paul was in his time, for the truth's sake; and we would be chiefly concerned for the unhappy scoffers, who, unless God is pleased to give them repentance unto life, will one day wish they had been idiots, or lunatics, rather than have vented their malicious wit against the grace and gospel of the Lord Christ. But it must be allowed, we have seen Antinomians in the worst sense of the word, men who have pleaded for sin, and, while they have laid claim to faith, have renounced and blasphemed that holiness without which no man shall see the Lord. We cannot wonder, that even candid and well-meaning persons have been greatly prejudiced, and discouraged in their inquiries after truth, by the presumption and wickedness of such pretended Christians. But no period of the church, in which the gospel-doctrine was known and preached, has been free from offences of this sort. It was so in the apostles days. There were then many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, who subverted whole houses, teaching things which they ought not (2); who professed that they knew God, but in works denied him, being abominable and disobedient, and to every good work reprobate (3); who pretended to faith, but were destitute of those fruits which true faith always produces (4). These are described (5) as clouds without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, twice

(1) Rom. iii. 8.

(2) Tit. i. 10. 11.

(3) Tit. ii. 16.

(4) James, ii. 14.

(5) Jude, 12. 13.

dead,



dead, plucked up by the roots; raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever; sporting themselves with their own deceivings, and beguiling unstable souls (1). In opposition to such deceivers, it is written, "If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth (2)." He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him (3). For every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure (4). The foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal (5), The Lord knoweth them that are his, and, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

St Paul, writing to the Thessalonians concerning the man of sin (6), who was to be fully revealed in the following ages, reminds them, that the mystery of iniquity, though at that time restrained from a full manifestation, did already work; teaching us, that the seeds of that grand apostacy, which at length overspread the whole professing church, were sown, and springing up, at the time of his writing. And he mentions several particulars in his epistle to the Colossians (7); such as a voluntary or self-devised humility, in worshipping angels as mediators or intercessors; a dogmatic inhibition of things which God had left free; and a specious scheme of will-worship and mortification, which, under pretence of self-denial, did really gratify pride, vanity, and self-righteousness. The progress of our history will shew what a harvest of

(1) 2 Pet. ii. 13-14.

(3) 1 John, ii. 4.

(5) 2 Tim. ii. 19.

(7) Col. ii. 18.—23,

(2) 1 John, i. 6.

(4) 1 John, iii. 6.

(6) 2 Theff. ii. 3.—10.

dreadful



dreadful and wide-spreading evils were produced from these principles, until at length the gospel of Christ was wholly obscured, and the lives and consciences of men were given up to the power of Antichrist, who, as god, insolently sat down in the temple of God, and exalted himself above all laws, human and divine. It is sufficient to my purpose, at present, to take notice, that the beginnings of that spiritual infatuation, which so long detained the world in chains, and darkness, and slavery, under the tyranny of the church of Rome, were observable in St Paul's time, and therefore deserve a place in the list of those pestilent heresies by which the enemy of souls attempted to defile the faith, and disturb the peace, of the primitive church.

Many other things are alluded to, which, for want of authentic records of the first century, we cannot with certainty explain. Besides the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, already mentioned, we read of the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews but are not, but of the synagogue of Satan (1); of them who held the doctrine of Balaam, and of the woman Jezebel, who called herself a prophetess (2). These were certainly heretics; for our Lord severely rebukes the churches for not opposing them to the utmost; and, as he gives them different names, they probably differed from each other, though their ultimate tendency was the same, to pervert the faith of the hearers, and to introduce licentiousness of practice. The gospel-truth is a doctrine according to godliness, and has a sanctifying influence; for the grace of God teaches (3) all who are partakers of it, to forsake all ungodliness and worldly lusts, and to live soberly, righteously, and godly, in the present world.

(1) Rev. iii. 9.

(2) Rev. ii. 14, 20.

(3) Titus, ii. 11, 12.

But



But errors and heresies, in whatever degree they prevail, have a poisonous effect upon those who admit them: some are calculated to set aside the whole frame of obedience which we owe to our God and Saviour, and the most refined and plausible will deliver the soul into the power of some easy, besetting, and beloved sin, and furnish arms and arguments to maintain it. And this explains what would otherwise seem a very strange phenomenon. When the truth is proposed with the greatest clearness, and the greatest advantages, its votaries, at all times, and in all places, have been but few; but whoever will stand up on the side of error, however wild and absurd his opinions and conduct may be, will hardly fail of obtaining adherents. It is because error will tolerate those lusts and follies which truth will not endure: and in the present state of human depravity, more people will be found willing to give up their understandings, than to part with their sins.

We may likewise collect from several texts in the epistles, that there were those of old who denied what the scripture teaches concerning the depravity of human nature, the real guilt of sin (1), the influences of the Holy Spirit (2), and the terrors of a future judgement (3), though we cannot be sure that these doctrines were opposed so openly and so strenuously as they are in our own days. But I have remunerated enough to answer my purpose, by way of apology for the evangelical doctrine, the modern opposers of the last-mentioned points not being under any suspicion or charge of what is called enthusiasm; and all who are despised or persecuted for resting the hope of their salvation solely upon the mediation of Jesus, and his obedience unto death, even the death of the cross, are known

(1) 1 John, i. 8. 10. (2) Jude, 19. (3) 2 Pet. iii. 9.



to acknowledge them as essential truths; indeed they stand inseparably connected with what they believe of his person, offices, power, and grace. A conscience impressed with the majesty, holiness, and justice of the great God, and that trembles at the denunciations of his law against every transgression, dares not hope for peace without the discovery of an adequate atonement for sin, nor venture its eternal concerns upon the interposition of a creature. To such a one, all that is revealed of the love and sufferings of Jesus, would afford no solid ground of consolation, if the infinite dignity of his divine nature, and his voluntary substitution in the place and on the behalf of sinners, were not revealed with equal clearness; and a conviction of that total insufficiency for every good work (1), and the prevalence of indwelling sin (2), which the scripture so expressly declares to be the condition of every child of Adam, would plunge an awakened mind into hopeless despair, if it was not relieved by the gracious promise of the infallible Spirit (3), whose office is to teach, guide, comfort, and seal the children of God unto the day of complete redemption (4); but having such a great high priest (5), who, by his own blood, has entered into the holy place, to appear in the presence of God for us, and having, in the promise of the Holy Spirit (6), a source of succour and comfort answerable to all our ignorance, weakness, necessities, and temptations, we are enabled, in the midst of fightings and fears (7), to maintain a humble confidence that we shall not be ashamed before him at his coming, but have boldness in the day of judgement,

(1) 2 Cor. iii. 5.

(2) Rom. vii. 18 — 24.

(3) John, xiv. 26. and xvi. 7. 13.

(4) Ephes. iv. 30.

(5) Heb. viii. 1. and ix. 24. and x. 19.

(6) Rom. viii. 16. 26. 27.

(7) 2 Cor. vii. 5.

the



the great and terrible day of the Lord (1). On the other hand, it is no wonder that those who do not acknowledge the deity of the Saviour (not finding any other basis whereon to rest the validity of an atonement for sin) should embrace every shadow of an argument against its necessity, and be willing to think as highly as possible of their own righteousness and abilities; or, that being thus persuaded that they can please God, without the influence of his Spirit, *themselves*, they should treat all claims to this assistance in *others* as enthusiasm and folly. Nor can we be surprised, that many who reject the scripture-testimony concerning Christ and the Holy Spirit, should use all their address to prove, that the soul sinks into sleep and inactivity at death, that the resurrection of the flesh is improbable, and that it is injurious to the goodness of God, to suppose he will inflict eternal punishment for sins committed within the compass of a short life. Such reasonings may be expected from men, who presume upon the sufficiency of their own wisdom, who neither expect nor desire divine teaching, and who find a little relief in these sentiments, against the fears and forebodings which will sometimes force themselves upon their minds.

It appears, however, from the indisputable evidence of the New Testament, that, in the first age of the church, the enemy sowed the tares of error and heresy in great abundance, and that the figments published in that period, by men who professed some regard to the name of Christ, have not been surpassed, either as to absurdity or wickedness, by any attempts of the same kind, in any age or country since. It is true, the vigilance and authority of the apostles restrained these excesses from rising to that height to which they afterwards at-

(1) 1 John, ii. 28. and iv. 17.

tained;



tained; but if the people who now object to the variety of names, sects, and sentiments, which have gradually prevailed amongst *us* within these thirty years past, had lived in the primitive church, they would have had at least equal cause for making the like objections. If, upon these accounts, they *now* think themselves at liberty to reject all parties alike, without examination, as empty pretenders to the truth, purity, and power of religion, there is little doubt but they would have done the same *then*. The apostles were personally present with the first churches, their writings were appointed to be the rule of succeeding times, and through the mercy of God, are in our hands. Whoever is sincerely desirous to know the will of God, by attending to these lively oracles, will be enabled to discern the path of truth and peace, through the midst of that maze of opinions, wherein so many are bewildered and lost; but whoever is too wise, or too indolent, to search the scripture humbly and diligently for himself, would have paid as little regard to the authority of the apostles, if he could have conversed with them; nay, the advantage is on our side; for, as the scriptures are held in professed veneration, we run no immediate risk of character, or interest, by consulting them, or they may be perused in retirement, unobserved by our nearest friends: whereas the apostles, though highly spoken of amongst us, were accounted, while they lived, the filth and off-scouring of all things, they were despised for their poverty, and the meanness of their appearance, and detested as bigots and enthusiasts, so that it required some degree of faith and grace not to be ashamed of them.

Let not the reader be offended, if I close this book, as I did the former, with intreating him to reflect on the importance of having right views of



the gospel of Christ, and of the spirit of Christianity. These are topics of universal concern. A believer in Jesus, however obscure, unnoticed, or oppressed, in the present life, is happy: he is a child of God, the charge of angels, an heir of glory (1): he has meat to eat that the world knows not of; and from the knowledge of his union and relation to his Redeemer (2), he derives a peace which passes understanding, and a power suited to every service and circumstance of life: though weak in himself, he is strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus the Lord (3), upon whom he relies, as his wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and expects from him, in due time, a complete redemption from every evil (4): his faith is not merely speculative, like the cold assent we give to a mathematical truth, nor is it the blind impulse of a warm imagination; but it is the effect of an apprehension of the wisdom, power, and love, displayed in the redemption of sinners by Jesus Christ; it is a constraining principle (5), that works by love, purifies the heart, and overcomes the world; it gives the foretaste and evidence of things invisible to mortal eyes; and, transforming the soul into the resemblance of what it beholds, fills the heart with benevolence, gentleness, and patience, and directs every action to the sublimest ends, the glory of God, and the good of mankind.

But whatever is styled religion, that is not thus pure, thus peaceable, thus operative, or at least that does not lead the soul to desire the graces of the Spirit, and to seek them in God's appointed way, by faith in his Son, is unworthy the name. If you have not the Spirit of Christ, you are none

(1) Rom. viii. 14. 17.

(2) Phil. iv. 7.

(3) 2 Cor. xii. 9; 2 Tim. ii. 1.

(4) 1 Cor. i. 30.

(5) Gal. v. 6.; Acts, xv. 9.; 1 John, v. 4.; Heb. xi. 1.; 2 Cor. iii. 18.



of his (1); whatever else you may have, you have no interest in the promised blessings of the gospel; whatever else you can do, you cannot please God (2). If you do not count all things loss, and of no value (3), in comparison of the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus the Lord, you certainly do not understand the word *Gospel* in St Paul's sense; if you did, you would be of his mind: and are you not in danger of incurring that anathema, which, under the influence of the Spirit of God, he denounces (4) against all who love not the Lord Jesus? Search the scriptures, if you really think that in them you have eternal life (5). If indeed you could prove them to be cunningly-devised fables, you might neglect them without danger (6); but, if the scriptures are true, there is a day coming when God shall judge the world (7). I need not appeal to scripture to convince you, that, whatever your situation in life is, you must leave it, and experience a moment when the pleasures or honours of this world will afford you no comfort; but, if the scriptures are true, you must then appear before the judgement-seat of Christ; you must stand either at the right hand or the left (8). Important alternative! For to those on the left hand the King will say, "Depart from me, ye accursed (9)!"—If hitherto, while you have professed his name, you have had your heart filled with enmity against his doctrine and his people, if you have accounted his wisdom foolishness, and reproached the operations of his spirit as enthusiasm and madness,—it is to be hoped you have done it through ignorance, you knew not what

(1) Rom. viii. 9.

(2) Heb. xi. 6.

(3) Phil. iii. 8.

(4) 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

(5) John, v. 39.

(6) 2 Pet. i. 16.

(7) Acts, xvii. 31.

(8) 2 Cor. v. 10.

(9) Matth. xxv. 41.



you did (1); there is then forgiveness with him; as yet he is upon a throne of grace. May the Spirit of God lead you to him before he takes his seat upon the throne of judgement! otherwise you are lost for ever. My heart's desire and prayer to God, for my readers, will be, that not one of them may fall under that awful sentence, Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish! for I work a work in your days, which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you (2).

(1) 1 Tim. i. 15.; Luke, xxiii. 34. (2) Acts, xiii. 41.

## HYMNS.



# H Y M N S.

## 1. *A D A M.* Gen. iii. 9.

- 1 **O**N man, in his own image made,  
How much did God bestow ?  
The whole creation homage paid,  
And own'd him Lord below !
- 2 He dwelt in Eden's garden, stor'd  
With sweets for ev'ry sense ;  
And there, with his descending Lord,  
He walk'd in confidence.
- 3 But, oh ! by sin how quickly chang'd !  
His honour forfeited,  
His heart from God and truth estrang'd,  
His conscience fill'd with dread !
- 4 Now from his Maker's voice he flees,  
Which was before his joy :  
And thinks to hide, amidst the trees,  
From an all-seeing eye.
- 5 Compell'd to answer to his name,  
With stubbornness and pride,  
He cast on God himself the blame ;  
Nor once for mercy cry'd.
- 6 But grace, unask'd, his heart subdu'd,  
And all his guilt forgave ;  
By faith, the promis'd seed he view'd,  
And felt his pow'r to save.
- 7 Thus we ourselves would justify,  
Tho' we the law transgress ;  
Like him, unable to deny,  
Unwilling to confess.
- 8 But when by faith the sinner sees  
A pardon bought with blood ;  
Then he forsakes his foolish pleas,  
And gladly turns to God.

B b 3

2. *Lot*



2. *Lot in Sodom.* Gen. xiii. 10.

- 1 **H**OW hurtful was the choice of Lot,  
 Who took up his abode  
 (Because it was a fruitful spot)  
 With them who fear'd not God !
- 2 A pris'ner he was quickly made,  
 Bereav'd of all his store ;  
 And, but for Abraham's timely aid,  
 He had return'd no more.
- 3 Yet still he seem'd resolv'd to stay  
 As if it were his rest ;  
 Although their sins from day to day (1)  
 His righteous soul distress'd.
- 4 A while he stay'd with anxious mind,  
 Expos'd to scorn and strife ;  
 At last he left his all behind,  
 And fled to save his life.
- 5 In vain his sons-in-law he warn'd,  
 They thought he told his dreams ;  
 His daughters too, of them had learn'd,  
 And perish'd in the flames.
- 6 His wife escap'd a little way,  
 But dy'd for looking back :  
 Does not her case to pilgrims say,  
 " Beware of growing slack ?"
- 7 Yea, Lot himself could ling'ring stand,  
 Tho' vengeance was in view ;  
 'Twas mercy pluck'd him by the hand,  
 Or he had perish'd too.
- 8 The doom of Sodom will be ours,  
 If to the earth we cleave ;  
 Lord, quicken all our drowsy pow'rs,  
 To flee to thee and live.

(1) 2 Pet. ii. 8.



3. *The Lord will provide.* Gen. xxii. 14.

1 **T**HO' troubles assail,  
 And dangers affright,  
 Tho' friends should all fail,  
 And foes all unite;  
 Yet one thing secures us,  
 Whatever betide,  
 The scripture assures us,  
 The LORD will provide.

2 The birds without barn  
 Or storehouse are fed,  
 From them let us learn  
 To trust for our bread:  
 His saints, what is fitting,  
 Shall ne'er be deny'd,  
 So long as 'tis written,  
 The LORD will provide.

3 We may, like the ships,  
 By tempests be tost  
 On perilous deeps,  
 But cannot be lost:  
 Tho' Satan enrages  
 The wind and the tide,  
 The promise engages,  
 The LORD will provide.

4 His call we obey,  
 Like Abra'm of old,  
 Not knowing our way,  
 But faith makes us bold;  
 For tho' we are strangers  
 We have a good guide,  
 And trust in all dangers,  
 The LORD will provide.

5 When Satan appears  
 To stop up our path,  
 And fill us with fears,  
 We triumph by faith;

He



He cannot take from us,  
 Tho' oft he has try'd,  
 This heart-cheering promise,  
 The LORD will provide.

6 He tells us we're weak,  
 Our hope is in vain,  
 The good that we seek  
 We ne'er shall obtain;  
 But when such suggestions  
 Our spirits have ply'd,  
 This answers all questions,  
 The LORD will provide.

7 No strength of our own,  
 Or goodness we claim;  
 Yet since we have known  
 The Saviour's great name,  
 In this our strong tower  
 For safety we hide,  
 The LORD is our power,  
 The LORD will provide.

8 When life sinks apace,  
 And death is in view,  
 This word of his grace  
 Shall comfort us thro':  
 No fearing or doubting  
 With CHRIST on our side,  
 We hope to die shouting,  
 The LORD will provide.

4. *Joseph made known to his brethren.*  
 Gen. xlv. 3. 4.

1 **W**hen Joseph his brethren beheld,  
 Afflicted and trembling with fear,  
 His heart with compassion was fill'd;  
 From weeping he could not forbear.  
 Awhile his behaviour was rough,  
 To bring their past sin to their mind;  
 But when they were humbled enough,  
 He hastened to shew himself kind, 2 How



- 2 How little they thought it was he,  
 Whom they had ill treated and sold !  
 How great their confusion must be,  
 As soon as his name he had told !  
 " I am Joseph, your brother, he said,  
 And still to my heart you are dear;  
 You sold me, and thought I was dead,  
 But God, for your sakes, sent me here."
- 3 Tho' greatly distressed before,  
 When charg'd with purloining the cup;  
 They now were confounded much more,  
 Not one of them durst to look up.  
 " Can Joseph, whom we would have slain,  
 Forgive us the evil we did ?  
 And will he our households maintain ?  
 O this is a brother indeed !"
- 4 Thus dragg'd by my conscience, I came,  
 And laden with guilt, to the Lord,  
 Surrounded with terror and shame,  
 Unable to utter a word.  
 At first he look'd stern and severe,  
 What anguish then pierced my heart !  
 Expecting each moment to hear  
 The sentence, " Thou cursed, depart !"
- 5 But, oh ! what surprize when he spoke,  
 While tenderness beam'd in his face;  
 My heart then to pieces was broke,  
 O'erwhelm'd and confounded by grace:  
 " Poor sinner, I know thee full well,  
 By thee I was sold and was slain ;  
 But I dy'd to redeem thee from hell,  
 And raise thee in glory to reign.
- 6 I am Jesus, whom thou hast blasphem'd,  
 And crucify'd often afresh ;  
 But let me henceforth be esteem'd,  
 Thy brother, thy bone, and thy flesh.  
 My pardon I freely bestow,  
 Thy wants I will fully supply ;  
 I'll guide thee and guard thee below,  
 And soon will remove thee on high.
- 7 Go,



- 7 Go, publish to sinners around,  
 That they may be willing to come,  
 The mercy which now you have found,  
 And tell them that yet there is room."  
 Oh, sinners, the message obey!  
 No more vain excuses pretend;  
 But come, without farther delay,  
 To Jesus our brother and friend.

5. *The bitter waters.* Ex. xv. 23.—25.

- 1 **B**itter, indeed, the waters are  
 Which in this desert flow;  
 Though to the eye they promise fair,  
 They taste of sin and woe.
- 2 Of pleasing draughts I once could dream,  
 But now, awake, I find,  
 That sin has poison'd ev'ry stream,  
 And left a curse behind.
- 3 But there's a wonder-working wood,  
 I've heard believers say,  
 Can make these bitter waters good,  
 And take the curse away.
- 4 The virtues of this healing tree  
 Are known and priz'd by few;  
 Reveal this secret, Lord, to me,  
 That I may prize it too.
- 5 The cross on which the Saviour dy'd,  
 And conquer'd for his saints;  
 This is the tree, by faith apply'd,  
 Which sweetens all complaints.
- 6 Thousands have found the blest'd effect,  
 Nor longer mourn their lot;  
 While on his sorrows they reflect,  
 Their own are all forgot.
- 7 When they, by faith, behold the cross,  
 Tho' many griefs they meet,  
 They draw a gain from ev'ry loss,  
 And find the bitter sweet.

6. *MAN-*



6. *M A N N A.* Ex. xvi. 18.

- 1 **M**anna to Israel well supply'd  
 The want of other bread;  
 While God is able to provide,  
 His people shall be fed.
- 2 (Thus tho' the corn and wine should fail,  
 And creature-streams be dry;  
 The pray'r of faith will still prevail,  
 For blessings from on high).
- 3 Of his kind care how sweet a proof!  
 It suited ev'ry taste;  
 Who gather'd most, had just enough,  
 Enough, who gather'd least.
- 4 'Tis thus our gracious Lord provides  
 Our comforts and our cares;  
 His own unerring hand provides,  
 And gives us each our shares.
- 5 He knows how much the weak can bear,  
 And helps them when they cry;  
 The strongest have no strength to spare,  
 For such he'll strongly try.
- 6 Daily they saw the Manna come,  
 And cover all the ground;  
 But what they try'd to keep at home,  
 Corrupted soon was found.
- 7 Vain their attempt to store it up,  
 This was to tempt the Lord;  
 Israel must live by faith and hope,  
 And not upon a hoard.

7. *Manna hoarded.* Ex. xvi. 20.

- 1 **T**HE manna, favour'd Israel's meat,  
 Was gather'd day by day;  
 When all the host was serv'd, the heat  
 Melted the rest away.

2 In



- 2 In vain to hoard it up they try'd,  
 Against to-morrow came;  
 It then bred worms and putrify'd,  
 And prov'd their sin and shame.
- 3 'Twas daily bread, and would not keep,  
 But must be still renew'd;  
 Faith should not want a hoard or heap,  
 But trust the Lord for food.
- 4 The truths by which the soul is fed,  
 Must thus be had afresh;  
 For notions resting in the head,  
 Will only feed the flesh.
- 5 However true, they have no life,  
 Or unction to impart;  
 They breed the worms of pride and strife,  
 But cannot cheer the heart.
- 6 Nor can the best experience past,  
 The life of faith maintain;  
 The brightest hope will faint at last,  
 Unless supply'd again.
- 7 Dear Lord, while we in pray'r are found,  
 Do thou the Manna give;  
 Oh! let it fall on all around,  
 That we may eat and live.

8. *The golden calf.* Ex. xxxii. 4. 31.

- 1 **W**hen Israel heard the fiery law  
 From Sinai's top proclaim'd,  
 Their hearts seem'd full of holy awe,  
 Their stubborn spirits tam'd.
- 2 Yet, as forgetting all they knew,  
 Ere forty days were past,  
 With blazing Sinai still in view,  
 A molten calf they cast.
- 3 Yea, Aaron, God's anointed priest,  
 Who on the mount had been;  
 He durst prepare the idol-beast,  
 And lead them on to sin.

4 Lord



- 4 Lord, what is man! and what are we,  
To recompense thee thus!  
In their offence our own we see,  
Their story points at us.
- 5 From Sinai we have heard thee speak,  
And from Mount Calv'ry too;  
And yet to idols oft we seek,  
While thou art in our view.
- 6 Some golden calf, or golden dream,  
Some fancy'd creature-good,  
Presumes to share the heart with him,  
Who bought the whole with blood.
- 7 Lord, save us from our golden calves,  
Our sin with grief we own;  
We would no more be thine by halves,  
But live to thee alone.

9. *The true Aaron.* Lev. viii. 7.—9.

- 1 SEE Aaron, God's anointed priest,  
Within the vail appear,  
In robes of mystic meaning drefs'd,  
Presenting Israel's pray'r.
- 2 The plate of gold which crowns his brows,  
His holiness describes;  
His breast displays, in shining rows,  
The names of all the tribes.
- 3 With the atoning blood he stands,  
Before the mercy-seat;  
And clouds of incense from his hands,  
Arise with odour sweet.
- 4 Urim and Thummim near his heart,  
In rich engravings worn,  
The sacred light of truth impart,  
To teach and to adorn.
- 5 Through him the eye of faith descries  
A greater Priest than he;  
Thus Jesus pleads above the skies,  
For you, my friends, and me.



- 6 He bears the names of all his saints  
 Deep on his heart engrav'd ;  
 Attentive to the state and wants  
 Of all his love has sav'd.
- 7 In him a holiness complete,  
 Light and perfections shine ;  
 And wisdom, grace, and glory meet ;  
 A Saviour all divine.
- 8 The blood, which as a Priest he bears  
 For sinners, is his own ;  
 The incense of his pray'rs and tears  
 Perfume the holy throne.
- 9 In him my weary soul has rest,  
 Tho' I am weak and vile ;  
 I read my name upon his breast,  
 And see the Father smile.

10. *Sampson's lion.* Judges, xiv. 8.

- 1 THE lion that on Sampson roar'd,  
 And thirsted for his blood,  
 With honey afterwards was stor'd,  
 And furnish'd him with food.
- 2 Believers, as they pass along,  
 With many lions meet ;  
 But gather sweetness from the strong,  
 And from the eater, meat.
- 3 The lions rage and roar in vain,  
 For Jesus is their shield ;  
 Their losses prove a certain gain,  
 Their troubles comfort yield.
- 4 The world and Satan join their strength,  
 To fill their souls with fears ;  
 But crops of joy they reap at length,  
 From what they sow in tears.
- 5 Afflictions make them love the word,  
 Stir up their hearts to pray'r ;  
 And many precious proofs afford  
 Of their Redeemer's care.

6 The



- 6 The lions roar, but cannot kill,  
 Then fear them not, my friends;  
 They bring us, tho' against their will,  
 The honey Jesus sends.

11. *Hannah; or, The throne of grace.*  
 1 Sam. i. 18.

- 1 **W**hen Hannah, press'd with grief,  
 Pour'd forth her soul in pray'r,  
 She quickly found relief,  
 And left her burden there:  
 Like her, in every trying case,  
 Let us approach the throne of grace.
- 2 When she began to pray,  
 Her heart was pain'd and sad;  
 But ere she went away,  
 Was comforted and glad:  
 In trouble, what a resting place  
 Have they who know the throne of grace!
- 3 Tho' men and devils rage,  
 And threaten to devour;  
 The saints, from age to age,  
 Are safe from all their pow'r:  
 Fresh strength they gain to run their race,  
 By waiting at the throne of grace.
- 4 Eli her case mistook;  
 How was her spirit mov'd  
 By his unkind rebuke?  
 But God her cause approv'd.  
 We need not fear a creature's face,  
 While welcome at a throne of grace.
- 5 She was not fill'd with wine,  
 As Eli rashly thought;  
 But with a faith divine,  
 And found the help she fought:  
 Tho' men despise and call us base,  
 Still let us ply the throne of grace.

C c 2.

6 Men:



- 6 Men have not pow'r or skill  
 With troubled souls to bear;  
 Tho' they exprefs good-will,  
 Poor comforters they are:  
 But swelling sorrows sink apace,  
 When we approach the throne of grace.
- 7 Numbers before have try'd,  
 And found the promise true;  
 Nor one been yet deny'd,  
 Then why should I or you?  
 Let us by faith their footsteps trace,  
 And hasten to the throne of grace.
- 8 As fogs obscure the light,  
 And taint the morning air;  
 But soon are put to flight,  
 If the bright sun appear;  
 Thus Jesus will our troubles chase,  
 By shining from the throne of grace.

12. *Saul's Armour.* 1 Sam. xvii. 38.—49.

- 1 **W**hen first my soul enlisted  
 My Saviour's foes to fight,  
 Mistaken friends insisted  
 I was not arm'd aright:  
 So Saul advised David  
 He certainly would fail;  
 Nor could his life be saved  
 Without a coat of mail.
- 2 But David, tho' he yielded  
 To put the armour on,  
 Soon found he could not wield it,  
 And ventur'd forth with none.  
 With only sling and pebble  
 He fought the fight of faith;  
 The weapons seem'd but feeble,  
 Yet proved Goliath's death.

3 Had



- 3 Had I by him been guided,  
 And quickly thrown away  
 The armour men provided,  
 I might have gain'd the day;  
 But arm'd as they advis'd me,  
 My expectations fail'd;  
 My enemy surpris'd me,  
 And had almost prevail'd.
- 4 Furnish'd with books and notions,  
 And arguments and pride,  
 I practis'd all my motions,  
 And Satan's pow'r defy'd:  
 But soon perceiv'd with trouble,  
 That these would do no good;  
 Iron to him is stubble (1),  
 And brass-like rotten wood.
- 5 I triumph'd at a distance  
 While he was out of fight;  
 But faint was my resistance  
 When forc'd to join in fight:  
 He broke my sword in shivers,  
 And pierc'd my boasted shield;  
 Laugh'd at my vain endeavours,  
 And drove me from the field.
- 6 Satan will not be braved  
 By such a worm as I;  
 Then let me learn with David,  
 To trust in the Most High;  
 To plead the name of Jesus,  
 And use the sling of pray'r;  
 Thus arm'd, when Satan sees us  
 He'll tremble and despair.

(1) Job, xli. 27.



13. *David's Fall.* 2 Sam. xi. 27.

- 1 **H**OW David, when by sin deceiv'd,  
 From bad to worse went on!  
 For when the Holy Spirit's griev'd,  
 Our strength and guard are gone.
- 2 His eye on Bathsheba once fix'd,  
 With poison fill'd his soul;  
 He ventur'd on adult'ry next,  
 And murder crown'd the whole:
- 3 So from a spark of fire at first,  
 That has not been deserv'd,  
 A dreadful flame has often burst,  
 And ravag'd far and wide.
- 4 When sin deceives it hardens too;  
 For tho' he vainly sought  
 To hide his crimes from public view,  
 Of God he little thought.
- 5 He neither would, or could repent,  
 No true compunction felt;  
 'Till God in mercy Nathan sent,  
 His stubborn heart to melt.
- 6 The parable held forth a fact,  
 Design'd his case to shew;  
 But tho' the picture was exact,  
 Himself he did not know.
- 7 "Thou art the man," the prophet said,  
 That word his slumber broke;  
 And when he own'd his sin, and pray'd,  
 The Lord forgiveness spoke.
- 8 Let those who think they stand beware,  
 For David stood before;  
 Nor let the fallen soul despair,  
 For mercy can restore.

14. *Queen*



14. *Queen of Sheba.* 1 Kings, x. 1.—9.

- 1 FROM Sheba a distant report  
 Of Solomon's glory and fame;  
 Invited the Queen to his court,  
 But all was outdone when she came;  
 She cry'd, with a pleasing surprise,  
 When first she before him appear'd,  
 "How much, what I see with my eyes,  
 "Surpasses the rumour I heard!"
- 2 When once to Jerusalem come,  
 The treasure and train she had brought;  
 The wealth she possessed at home,  
 No longer had place in her thought:  
*His house, his attendants, his throne,*  
 All struck her with wonder and awe;  
 The glory of Solomon shone  
 In every object she saw.
- 3 But Solomon most she admir'd,  
 Whose spirit conducted the whole;  
 His wisdom, which God had inspir'd,  
 His bounty and greatness of soul;  
 Of all the hard questions she put,  
 A ready solution he shew'd;  
 Exceeded her wish and her suit,  
 And more than she ask'd him bestow'd.
- 4 Thus I when the gospel proclaim'd  
 The Saviour's great name in my ears,  
 The wisdom for which he is fam'd;  
 The love which to sinners he bears;  
 I long'd, and I was not deny'd,  
 That I in his presence might bow;  
 I saw, and transported I cry'd,  
 "A greater than Solomon thou!"
- 5 My conscience no comfort could find,  
 By doubt and hard questions oppos'd;  
 But he restor'd peace to my mind,  
 And answer'd each doubt I propos'd:  
 Beholding



Beholding me poor and distress'd,  
 His bounty supply'd all my wants;  
 My pray'r could have never express'd  
 So much as this Solomon grants.  
 6 I heard, and was slow to believe;  
 But now with my eyes I behold  
 Much more than my heart could conceive,  
 Or language could ever have told:  
 How happy thy servants must be,  
 Who always before thee appear!  
 Vouchsafe, Lord, this blessing to me,  
 I find it is good to be here.

15. *Elijah fed by ravens.* 1 Kings, xvii. 6.

1 **E**lijah's example declares,  
 Whatever distress may betide,  
 The saints may commit all their cares  
 To him who will surely provide:  
 When rain long with-held from the earth  
 Occasion'd a famine of bread,  
 The prophet, secure from the dearth,  
 By ravens was constantly fed.  
 2 More likely to rob than to feed,  
 Were ravens who live upon prey;  
 But when the Lord's people have need,  
 His goodness will find out a way:  
 This instance to those may seem strange,  
 Who know not how faith can prevail;  
 But sooner all nature shall change,  
 Than one of God's promises fail.  
 3 Nor is it a singular case,  
 The wonder is often renew'd;  
 And many can say, to his praise,  
 He sends them by ravens their food:  
 Thus worldlings, tho' ravens indeed,  
 Tho' greedy and selfish their mind,  
 If God has a servant to feed,  
 Against their own wills can be kind.

4 Thus



- 4 Thus Satan, that raven unclean,  
 Who croaks in the ears of the saints,  
 Compell'd by a power unseen,  
 Administers oft to their wants :  
 God teaches them how to find food  
 From all the temptations they feel ;  
 This raven, who thirsts for my blood,  
 Has help'd me to many a meal.
- 5 How safe and how happy are they  
 Who on the good shepherd rely !  
 He gives them out strength for their day,  
 Their wants he will surely supply :  
 He ravens and lions can tame,  
 All creatures obey his command ;  
 Then let me rejoice in his name,  
 And leave all my cares in his hand.

16. *The meal and cruise of oil.* 1 Kings, xvii. 16.

- 1 **B**Y the poor widow's oil and meal  
 Elijah was sustain'd ;  
 Tho' small the stock, it lasted well,  
 For God the store maintain'd.
- 2 It seem'd as if from day to day,  
 They were to eat and die ;  
 But still, though in a secret way,  
 He sent a fresh supply.
- 3 Thus to his poor he still will give  
 Just for the present hour ;  
 But for to-morrow they must live  
 Upon his word and pow'r.
- 4 No barn or storehouse they possess  
 On which they can depend ;  
 Yet have no cause to fear distress,  
 For Jesus is their friend.
- 5 Then let not doubts your mind assail,  
 Remember God has said,  
 " The cruise and barrel shall not fail,  
 My people shall be fed."

6 And



- 6 And thus tho' faint it often seems,  
 He keeps their grace alive ;  
 Supply'd by his refreshing streams,  
 Their dying hopes revive.
- 7 Tho' in ourselves we have no stock,  
 The Lord is nigh to save ;  
 His door flies open when we knock,  
 And 'tis but ask and have.

17. *The joy of the Lord is your strength.* Nehemiah, ix. 10.

- 1 **J**OY is a fruit that will not grow  
 In nature's barren foil ;  
 All we can boast, till Christ we know,  
 Is vanity and toil.
- 2 But where the Lord has planted grace,  
 And made his glories known ;  
 There fruits of heavenly joy and peace  
 Are found, and there alone.
- 3 A bleeding Saviour seen by faith,  
 A sense of pard'ning love,  
 A hope that triumphs over death,  
 Give joys like those above.
- 4 To take a glimpse within the vail,  
 To know that God is mine,  
 Are springs of joy that never fail,  
 Unspeakably divine !
- 5 These are the joys which satisfy,  
 And sanctify the mind ;  
 Which make the spirit mount on high,  
 And leave the world behind.
- 6 No more, believers, mourn your lot ;  
 But if you are the Lord's,  
 Resign to them that know him not  
 Such joys as earth affords.

18. *Ab*



18. *Oh that I were as in months past.* Job,  
xxix. 2.

- 1 Sweet was the time when first I felt  
The Saviour's pard'ning blood  
Apply'd, to cleanse my soul from guilt,  
And bring me home to God.
- 2 Soon as the morn the light reveal'd,  
His praises tun'd my tongue;  
And when the ev'ning shades prevail'd,  
His love was all my song.
- 3 In vain the tempter spread his wiles,  
The world no more could charm;  
I liv'd upon my Saviour's smiles,  
And lean'd upon his arm.
- 4 In pray'r my soul drew near the Lord,  
And saw his glory shine;  
And when I read his holy word,  
I call'd each promise mine.
- 5 Then to his saints I often spoke,  
Of what his love had done;  
But now my heart is almost broke,  
For all my joys are gone.
- 6 Now when the evening shade prevails,  
My soul in darkness mourns;  
And when the morn the light reveals,  
No light to me returns.
- 7 My prayers are now a chatt'ring noise,  
For Jesus hides his face;  
I read, the promise meets my eyes,  
But will not reach my case.
- 8 Now Satan threatens to prevail,  
And make my soul his prey;  
Yet Lord, thy mercies cannot fail,  
O come without delay.

19. *Nene*



19. *None upon earth I desire besides thee.* Ps. lxxiii.  
25.

- 1 **H**OW tedious and tasteless the hours,  
When Jesus no longer I see;  
Sweet prospects, sweet birds, and sweet flow'rs,  
Have lost all their sweetness with me:  
The mid-summer sun shines but dim,  
The fields strive in vain to look gay;  
But when I am happy in him,  
December's as pleasant as May.
- 2 His name yields the richest perfume,  
And sweeter than music his voice;  
His presence disperses my gloom,  
And makes all within me rejoice:  
I should, were he always thus nigh,  
Have nothing to wish or to fear;  
No mortal so happy as I,  
My summer would last all the year.
- 3 Content with beholding his face,  
My all to his pleasure resign'd;  
No changes of season or place,  
Would make any change in my mind:  
While blest'd with a sense of his love,  
A palace a toy would appear;  
And prisons would palaces prove,  
If Jesus would dwell with me there.
- 4 Dear Lord, if indeed I am thine,  
If thou art my sun and my song;  
Say, why do I languish and pine,  
And why are my winters so long?  
O drive these dark clouds from my sky,  
Thy soul-cheering presence restore;  
Or take me unto thee on high,  
Where winter and clouds are no more.

20. *The*



20. *The believer's safety.* Pf. xci.

- 1 **I**ncarnate God ! the soul that knows  
   Thy name's mysterious pow'r,  
   Shall dwell in undisturb'd repose,  
   Nor fear the trying hour.
- 2 Thy wisdom, faithfulness, and love,  
   To feeble helpless worms,  
   A buckler and a refuge prove  
   From enemies and storms.
- 3 In vain the fowler spreads his net,  
   To draw them from thy care ;  
   Thy timely call instructs their feet  
   To shun the artful snare.
- 4 When, like a baneful pestilence,  
   Sin mows its thousands down  
   On ev'ry side, without defence,  
   Thy grace secures thine own.
- 5 No midnight-terrors haunt their bed,  
   No arrow wounds by day ;  
   Unhurt on serpents they shall tread,  
   If found in duty's way.
- 6 Angels, unseen, attend the saints,  
   And bear them in their arms,  
   To cheer the spirit when it faints,  
   And guard the life from harms.
- 7 The angels' Lord himself is nigh  
   To them that love his name ;  
   Ready to save them when they cry,  
   And put their foes to shame.
- 8 Crosses and changes are their lot,  
   Long as they sojourn here ;  
   But since their Saviour changes not,  
   What have the saints to fear ?



21. *He led them by a right way.* Pf. cvii. 7.

- 1 **W**hen Israel was from Egypt freed,  
The Lord, who brought them out,  
Help'd them in ev'ry time of need,  
But led them round about (1).
- 2 To enter Canaan soon they hop'd;  
But quickly chang'd their mind,  
When the Red sea their passage stopp'd,  
And Pharaoh march'd behind.
- 3 The desert fill'd them with alarms,  
For water and for food;  
And Amalek, by force of arms,  
To check their progress stood.
- 4 They often murmur'd by the way,  
Because they judg'd by sight;  
But were at length constrain'd to say,  
The Lord had led them right.
- 5 In the Red sea that stopp'd them first,  
Their enemies were drown'd;  
The rocks gave water for their thirst,  
And manna spread the ground.
- 6 By fire and cloud their way was shown  
Across the pathless sands,  
And Amalek was overthrown  
By Moses' lifted hands.
- 7 The way was right their hearts to prove,  
To make God's glory known;  
And shew his wisdom, pow'r, and love,  
Engag'd to save his own.
- 8 Just so the true believer's path  
Through many dangers lies;  
Tho' dark to sense, 'tis right to faith,  
And leads us to the skies.

(1) Exodus, xiii. 17.

22. *What*



22. *What shall I render?* Pf. cxvi. 12. 13.

- 1 **F**OR mercies, countless as the sands,  
Which daily I receive  
From Jesus my Redeemer's hands,  
My soul, what canst thou give?
- 2 Alas! from such a heart as mine,  
What can I bring him forth?  
My best is stain'd and dy'd with sin,  
My all is nothing worth.
- 3 Yet this acknowledgement I'll make  
For all he has bestow'd,  
Salvation's sacred cup I'll take,  
And call upon my God.
- 4 The best returns for one like me,  
So wretched and so poor,  
Is from his gifts to draw a plea,  
And ask him still for more.
- 5 I cannot serve him as I ought,  
No works have I to boast;  
Yet would I glory in the thought  
That I shall owe him most.

23. *Vanity of Life.* Ecclef. i. 2.

- 1 **T**HE evils that beset our path,  
Who can prevent or cure?  
We stand upon the brink of death,  
When most we seem secure.
- 2 If we to-day sweet peace possess,  
It soon may be withdrawn;  
Some change may plunge us in distress,  
Before to-morrow's dawn.
- 3 Disease and pain invade our health,  
And find an easy prey;  
And oft, when least expected, wealth  
Takes wings, and flies away.

D d 2

4 A



- 4 A fever or a blow can shake  
Our wisdom's boasted rule;  
And of the brightest genius make  
A madman or a fool.
- 5 The gourds, from which we look for fruit,  
Produce us only pain;  
A worm unseen attacks the root,  
And all our hopes are vain.
- 6 I pity those who seek no more  
Than such a world can give;  
Wretched they are, and blind, and poor,  
And dying while they live.
- 7 Since sin has fill'd the earth with wo,  
And creatures fade and die;  
Lord, wean our hearts from things below,  
And fix our hopes on high.

24. *The name of Jesus.* Sol. Song, i. 3.

- 1 **H**OW sweet the name of Jesus sounds  
In a believer's ear!  
It soothes his sorrows, heals his wounds,  
And drives away his fear.
- 2 It makes the wounded spirit whole,  
And calms the troubled breast;  
'Tis manna to the hungry soul,  
And to the weary rest.
- 3 Dear name! the rock on which I build,  
My shield and hiding-place;  
My never-failing treasury fill'd  
With boundless stores of grace.
- 4 By thee my pray'rs acceptance gain,  
Altho' with sin defil'd;  
Satan accuses me in vain,  
And I am own'd a child.
- 5 Jesus! my Shepherd, Husband, Friend,  
My Prophet, Priest, and King;  
My Lord, my Life, my Way, my End,  
Accept the praise I bring.

- 6 Weak



- 6 Weak is the effort of my heart,  
 And cold my warmest thought;  
 But when I see thee as thou art,  
 I'll praise thee as I ought.
- 7 'Till then I would thy love proclaim  
 With ev'ry fleeting breath;  
 And may the music of thy name  
 Refresh my soul in death.

25. *The Refuge, River, and Rock of the church,*  
 H. xxxii. 2.

- 1 **H**E who on earth as man was known,  
 And bore our sins and pains,  
 Now, seated on th' eternal throne,  
 The God of glory reigns.
- 2 His hands the wheels of nature guide  
 With an unerring skill;  
 And countless worlds extended wide,  
 Obey his sov'reign will.
- 3 While harps unnumber'd sound his praise,  
 In yonder world above;  
 His saints on earth admire his ways,  
 And glory in his love.
- 4 His righteousness, to faith reveal'd,  
 Wrought out for guilty worms,  
 Affords a hiding-place and shield,  
 From enemies and storms.
- 5 This land, through which his pilgrims go,  
 Is desolate and dry;  
 But streams of grace from him o'erflow,  
 Their thirst to satisfy.
- 6 When troubles, like a burning sun,  
 Beat heavy on their head,  
 To this almighty Rock they run,  
 And find a pleasing shade.

D d 3

7 How



- 7 How glorious he ! how happy they  
 In such a glorious friend !  
 Whose love secures them all the way,  
 And crowns them at the end.

26. *The good Physician.*

- 1 **H**OW lost was my condition,  
 Till Jesus made me whole !  
 There is but one physician  
 Can cure a sin-sick soul.  
 Next door to death he found me,  
 And snatch'd me from the grave,  
 To tell to all around me,  
 His wond'rous pow'r to save.
- 2 The worst of all diseases  
 Is light, compar'd with sin ;  
 On ev'ry part it seizes,  
 But rages most within :  
 'Tis palsy, plague, and fever,  
 And madness — all combin'd ;  
 And none but a believer  
 The least relief can find.
- 3 From men great skill professing  
 I thought a cure to gain ;  
 But this prov'd more distressing,  
 And added to my pain :  
 Some said that nothing ail'd me,  
 Some gave me up for lost ;  
 Thus ev'ry refuge fail'd me,  
 And all my hopes were cross'd.
- 4 At length this great Physician,  
 How matchless is his grace !  
 Accepted my petition,  
 And undertook my case :  
 First gave me sight to view him,  
 For sin my eyes had seal'd ;  
 Then bid me look unto him,  
 I look'd, and I was heal'd.



- 5 A dying risen Jesus,  
 Seen by the eye of faith,  
 At once from danger frees us,  
 And saves the soul from death.  
 Come then to this Physician,  
 His help he'll freely give;  
 He makes no hard condition,  
 'Tis only — look and live.

27. *The Lord is my portion.* Lam. iii. 24.

- 1 From pole to pole let others roam,  
 And search in vain for bliss;  
 My soul is satisfy'd at home,  
 The Lord my portion is.
- 2 Jesus, who on his glorious throne,  
 Rules heav'n and earth and sea,  
 Is pleas'd to claim me for his own,  
 And give himself to me.
- 3 His person fixes all my love,  
 His blood removes my fear;  
 And while he pleads for me above,  
 His arm preserves me here.
- 4 His word of promise is my food,  
 His Spirit is my guide;  
 Thus daily is my strength renew'd,  
 And all my wants supply'd.
- 5 For him I count as gain each loss;  
 Disgrace, for him, renown;  
 Well may I glory in his cross,  
 While he prepares my crown!
- 6 Let worldlings then indulge their boast,  
 How much they gain or spend!  
 Their joys must soon give up the ghost,  
 But mine shall know no end.

28. *Humbled*



28. *Humbled and silenced by mercy.* Ezek. xvi. 64.

- 1 **O**nce perishing in blood I lay,  
Creatures no help could give;  
But Jesus pass'd me in the way,  
He saw, and bid me live.
- 2 Tho' Satan still his rule maintain'd,  
And all his arts employ'd;  
That mighty Word his rage restrain'd,  
I could not be destroy'd.
- 3 At length the time of love arriv'd,  
When I my Lord should know;  
Then Satan, of his pow'r depriv'd,  
Was forc'd to let me go.
- 4 **O** can I ere that day forget  
When Jesus kindly spoke!  
"Poor soul, my blood has paid thy debt,  
And now I break thy yoke.
- 5 Henceforth I take thee for my own,  
And give myself to thee;  
For sake the idols thou hast known,  
And yield thyself to me."
- 6 Ah, worthless heart! it promis'd fair,  
And said it would be thine;  
I little thought it e'er would dare  
Again with idols join.
- 7 Lord, dost thou such backslidings heal,  
And pardon all that's past?  
Sure, if I am not made of steel,  
Thou hast prevail'd at last.
- 8 My tongue, which rashly spoke before,  
This mercy will restrain;  
Surely I now shall boast no more,  
Nor censure, nor complain.

29. *They*



29. *They shall be mine, saith the Lord.*  
Mal. iii. 16.—18.

- 1 **W**hen sinners utter boasting words,  
And glory in their shame;  
The Lord, well-pleas'd, an ear affords  
To those who fear his name.
- 2 They often meet to seek his face,  
And what they do, or say,  
Is noted in his book of grace  
Against another day.
- 3 For they, by faith, a day descry,  
And joyfully expect,  
When he, descending from the sky,  
His jewels will collect.
- 4 Unnotic'd now, because unknown,  
A poor and suff'ring few;  
He comes to claim them for his own,  
And bring them forth to view.
- 5 With transport then their Saviour's care  
And favour they shall prove;  
As tender parents guard and spare  
The children of their love.
- 6 Assembled worlds will then discern,  
The saints alone are blest,  
When wrath shall like an oven burn,  
And vengeance strike the rest.

30. *The beggar.* Matth. vii. 7.—8.

- 1 **E**ncourag'd by thy word  
Of promise to the poor,  
Behold a beggar, Lord,  
Waits at thy mercy's door!  
No hand, no heart, O Lord, but thine,  
Can help or pity wants like mine.

2 The



- 2 The beggar's usual plea,  
Relief from men to gain,  
If offer'd unto thee,  
I know thou would'st disdain :  
And pleas which move thy gracious ear,  
Are such as men would scorn to hear.
- 3 I have no right to say,  
That tho' I now am poor,  
Yet once there was a day  
When I possess'd more :  
Thou know'st that from my very birth,  
I've been the poorest wretch on earth.
- 4 Nor can I dare profess,  
As beggars often do,  
Tho' great is my distress,  
My wants have been but few :  
If thou shouldst leave my soul to starve,  
It would be what I well deserve.
- 5 'Twere folly to pretend  
I never begg'd before,  
Or, if thou now befriend,  
I'll trouble thee no more :  
Thou often hast reliev'd my pain,  
And often I must come again.
- 6 Tho' crumbs are much too good  
For such a dog as I,  
No less than childrens' food  
My soul can satisfy :  
O do not frown and bid me go,  
I must have all thou canst bestow.
- 7 Nor can I willing be  
Thy bounty to conceal  
From others, who, like me,  
Their wants and hunger feel :  
I'll tell them of thy mercy's store,  
And try to send a thousand more.
- 8 Thy thoughts, thou only wise !  
Our thoughts and ways transcend,

Far



Far as the arched skies  
 Above the earth extend (1) :  
 Such pleas as mine men would not bear,  
 But God receives a beggar's pray'r.

31. *The Leper.* Matth. viii. 2. 3.

- 1 **O**FT as the leper's case I read,  
 My own describ'd I feel;  
 Sin is a leprosy indeed,  
 Which none but Christ can heal.
- 2 A while I would have pass'd for well,  
 And strove my spots to hide;  
 Till it broke out incurable,  
 Too plain to be deny'd.
- 3 Then from the saints I sought to flee,  
 And dreaded to be seen;  
 I thought they all would point at me,  
 And cry, "Unclean, unclean!"
- 4 What anguish did my soul endure  
 Till hope and patience ceas'd?  
 The more I strove myself to cure,  
 The more the plague increas'd.
- 5 While thus I lay distress'd, I saw  
 The Saviour passing by;  
 To him, tho' fill'd with shame and awe,  
 I rais'd my mournful cry.
- 6 Lord, thou canst heal me if thou wilt,  
 For thou canst all things do;  
 O cleanse my leprous soul from guilt,  
 My filthy heart renew!
- 7 He heard, and with a gracious look  
 Pronounc'd the healing word,  
 "I will, be clean;"—and while he spoke  
 I felt my health restor'd.

(1) If. lv. 8. 9.



- 8 Come lepers, seize the present hour,  
 The Saviour's grace to prove;  
 He *can* relieve, for he is pow'r;  
 He *will*, for he is love.

32. *A sick soul.* Matth. ix. 12.

- 1 **P**hysician of my sin-sick soul,  
 To thee I bring my case;  
 My raging malady controul,  
 And heal me by thy grace.
- 2 Pity the anguish I endure,  
 See how I mourn and pine;  
 For never can I hope a cure  
 From any hand but thine.
- 3 I would disclose my whole complaint,  
 But where shall I begin?  
 No words of mine can fully paint  
 That worst distemper, sin.
- 4 It lies not in a single part,  
 But through my frame is spread;  
 A burning fever in my heart,  
 A palsy in my head.
- 5 It makes me deaf, and dumb, and blind,  
 And impotent and lame;  
 And overclouds, and fills my mind  
 With folly, fear, and shame.
- 6 A thousand evil thoughts intrude  
 Tumultuous in my breast;  
 Which indispose me for my food,  
 And rob me of my rest.
- 7 Lord I am sick, regard my cry,  
 And set my spirit free;  
 Say, canst thou let a sinner die,  
 Who longs to live to thee?

33. *What*



33. *What think ye of Christ?* Matth. xxii. 42.

- 1 **W**Hat think you of Christ? is the test  
 To try both your state and your scheme;  
 You cannot be right in the rest,  
 Unless you think rightly of him.  
 As Jesus appears in your view,  
 As he is beloved or not;  
 So God is disposed to you,  
 And mercy or wrath are your lot.
- 2 Some take him a creature to be,  
 A man, or an angel at most;  
 Sure these have not feelings like me,  
 Nor know themselves wretched and lost:  
 So guilty, so helpless, am I,  
 I durst not confide in his blood,  
 Nor on his protection rely,  
 Unless I were sure he is God.
- 3 Some call him a Saviour in word,  
 But mix their own works with his plan;  
 And hope he his help will afford,  
 When they have done all that they can:  
 If doings prove rather too light  
 (A little, they own, they may fail)  
 They purpose to make up full weight,  
 By casting his name in the scale.
- 4 Some style him the pearl of great price,  
 And say he's the fountain of joys;  
 Yet feed upon folly and vice,  
 And cleave to the world and its toys:  
 Like Judas, the Saviour they kiss,  
 And, while they salute him, betray;  
 Ah! what will profession like this  
 Avail in his terrible day?
- 5 If ask'd, what of Jesus I think?  
 Tho' still my best thoughts are but poor,  
 I say, he's my meat and my drink,  
 My life, and my strength, and my store,

VOL. III.

E c

My



My Shepherd, my Husband, my Friend,  
 My Saviour from sin and from thrall,  
 My hope from beginning to end,  
 My Portion, my Lord, and my All.

34. *Peter sinning and repenting.* Matth. xxvi. 73.

- 1 **W**HEN Peter boasted, soon he fell,  
 Yet was by grace restor'd;  
 His case should be regarded well  
 By all who fear the Lord.
- 2 A voice it has, and helping hand,  
 Backsliders to recall;  
 And cautions those who think they stand,  
 Lest suddenly they fall.
- 3 He said, "Whatever others do,  
 With Jesus I'll abide;"  
 Yet soon, amidst a murd'rous crew,  
 His suff'ring Lord deny'd.
- 4 He who had been so bold before,  
 Now trembled like a leaf;  
 Not only ly'd, but curs'd and swore,  
 To gain the more belief.
- 5 While he blasphem'd he heard the cock,  
 And Jesus look'd in love;  
 At once, as if by light'ning struck,  
 His tongue forbore to move.
- 6 Deliver'd thus from Satan's snare,  
 He starts, as from a sleep;  
 His Saviour's look he could not bear,  
 But hasted forth to weep.
- 7 But sure the faithful cock had crow'd  
 A hundred times in vain,  
 Had not the Lord that look bestow'd,  
 The meaning to explain.
- 8 As I, like Peter, vows have made,  
 Yet acted Peter's part;  
 So conscience, like the cock, upbraids  
 My base ungrateful heart.

9 Lord



- 9 Lord Jesus, hear a sinner's cry,  
 My broken peace renew;  
 And grant one pitying look, that I  
 May weep with Peter too.

35. *The heart taken.* Luke, xi. 21. 22.

- 1 **T**HE castle of the human heart  
 Strong in its native sin,  
 Is guarded well, in ev'ry part,  
 By him who dwells within.
- 2 For Satan there, in arms, resides,  
 And calls the place his own;  
 With care against assaults provides,  
 And rules, as on a throne.
- 3 Each traitor thought on him, as chief,  
 In blind obedience waits;  
 And pride, self-will, and unbelief,  
 Are posted at the gates.
- 4 Thus Satan for a season reigns,  
 And keeps his goods in peace;  
 The soul is pleas'd to wear his chains,  
 Nor wishes a release.
- 5 But Jesus, stronger far than he,  
 In his appointed hour  
 Appears, to set his people free  
 From the usurper's pow'r.
- 6 " This heart I bought with blood, he says,  
 And now it shall be mine;"  
 His voice the strong one arm'd disarms,  
 He knows he must resign.
- 7 In spite of unbelief and pride,  
 And self, and Satan's art;  
 The gates of brass fly open wide,  
 And Jesus wins the heart.
- 8 The rebel soul, that once withstood  
 The Saviour's kindest call,  
 Rejoices now, by grace subdu'd,  
 To serve him with her all.

E c 2

36. *The*



36. *The barren fig-tree.* Luke, xiii. 6.—9.

- 1 THE church a garden is,  
In which believers stand,  
Like ornamental trees  
Planted by God's own hand:  
His Spirit waters all their roots,  
And ev'ry branch abounds with fruits.
- 2 But other trees there are,  
In this inclosure grow,  
Which, tho' they promise fair,  
Have only leaves to show:  
No fruits of grace are on them found,  
Thy stand but cumb'ers of the ground.
- 3 The under gard'ner grieves,  
In vain his strength he spends,  
For heaps of useless leaves,  
Afford him small amends:  
He hears the Lord his will make known,  
To cut the barren fig-trees down.
- 4 How difficult his post,  
What pangs his bowels move,  
To find his wishes crost,  
His labours useless prove!  
His last relief is earnest pray'r,  
Lord, spare them yet another year.
- 5 Spare them, and let me try,  
What farther means may do;  
I'll fresh manure apply,  
My digging I'll renew:  
Who knows but yet they fruit may yield!  
If not—'tis just, they must be fell'd.
- 6 If, under means of grace,  
No gracious fruits appear,  
It is a dreadful case,  
Tho' God may long forbear:  
At length he'll strike the threatened blow,  
And lay the barren fig-tree low.

37. *The*



37. *The rebel's surrender to grace.**Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? Acts, ix. 6.*

- 1 **L**ord, thou hast won, at length I yield,  
 My heart, by mighty grace compell'd,  
 Surrenders all to thee:  
 Against thy terrors long I strove,  
 But who can stand against thy love?  
 Love conquers even me.
- 2 All that a wretch could do, I try'd,  
 Thy patience scorn'd, thy pow'r defy'd,  
 And trampled on thy laws;  
 Scarcely thy martyrs at the stake,  
 Could stand more stedfast for thy sake,  
 Than I in Satan's cause.
- 3 But since thou hast thy love reveal'd,  
 And shewn my soul a pardon seal'd,  
 I can resist no more:  
 Couldst thou for such a sinner bleed?  
 Canst thou for such a rebel plead?  
 I wonder and adore!
- 4 If thou hadst bid thy thunders roll,  
 And light'nings flash to blast my soul,  
 I still had stubborn been:  
 But mercy has my heart subdu'd,  
 A bleeding Saviour I have view'd,  
 And now, I hate my sin.
- 5 Now, Lord, I would be thine alone,  
 Come take possession of thine own,  
 For thou hast set me free;  
 Releas'd from Satan's hard command,  
 See all my powers waiting stand,  
 To be employ'd by thee.
- 6 My will conform'd to thine would move,  
 On thee my hope, desire, and love,



- In fix'd attention join ;  
 My hands, my eyes, my ears, my tongue,  
 Have Satan's servants been too long,  
 But now they shall be thine.
- 7 And can I be the very same,  
 Who lately durst blaspheme thy name,  
 And on thy gospel tread ?  
 Surely each one, who hears my case,  
 Will praise thee, and confess thy grace  
 Invincible indeed !

38. *Contentment.* Phil. iv. 11.

- 1 Fierce passions discompose the mind,  
 As tempests vex the sea ;  
 But calm content and peace we find,  
 When, Lord, we turn to thee.
- 2 In vain by reason and by rule,  
 We try to bend the will ;  
 For none, but in the Saviour's school,  
 Can learn the heav'nly skill.
- 3 Since at his feet my soul has sat,  
 His gracious words to hear,  
 Contented with my present state,  
 I cast on him my care.
- 4 " Art thou a sinner, soul ? he said,  
 Then how canst thou complain ?  
 How light thy troubles here, if weigh'd  
 With everlasting pain !
- 5 If thou of murmur'ing wouldst be cur'd,  
 Compare thy griefs with mine ;  
 Think what my love for thee endur'd,  
 And thou wilt not repine.
- 6 'Tis I appoint thy daily lot,  
 And I do all things well ;  
 Thou soon shalt leave this wretched spot,  
 And rise with me to dwell.



- 7 In life my grace shall strength supply,  
 Proportion'd to thy day ;  
 At death thou still shalt find me nigh,  
 To wipe thy tears away."
- 8 Thus I, who once my wretched days  
 In vain repinings spent,  
 Taught in my Saviour's school of grace,  
 Have learn'd to be content.

39. *Love-Tokens.* Heb. xii. 5. — 11.

- 1 Afflictions do not come alone,  
 A voice attends the rod ;  
 By both he to his saints is known,  
 A Father and a God !
- 2 Let not my children slight the stroke  
 I for chastisement send ;  
 Nor faint beneath my kind rebuke,  
 For still I am their friend.
- 3 The wicked I perhaps may leave  
 A while, and not reprove ;  
 But all the children I receive  
 I scourge, because I love.
- 4 If therefore you were left without  
 This needful discipline,  
 You might, with cause, admit a doubt,  
 If you indeed were mine.
- 5 Shall earthly parents then expect  
 Their children to submit ?  
 And will not you, when I correct,  
 Be humbled at my feet ?
- 6 To please themselves they oft chastise,  
 And put their sons to pain ;  
 But you are precious in my eyes,  
 And shall not smart in vain.
- 7 I see your hearts at present fill'd  
 With grief, and deep distress ;  
 But soon these bitter seeds shall yield  
 The fruits of righteousness.

8 Break



- 8 Break through the clouds, dear Lord, and shine !  
 Let us perceive thee nigh !  
 And to each mourning child of thine  
 These gracious words apply.

40. *A new-year's thought and prayer.*

- 1 **T**ime by moments steals away,  
 First the hour, and then the day;  
 Small the daily loss appears,  
 Yet it soon amounts to years :  
 Thus another year is flown,  
 Now it is no more our own ;  
 If it brought or promis'd good,  
 Than the years before the flood.
- 2 But (may none of us forget)  
 It has left us much in debt ;  
 Favours from the Lord receiv'd,  
 Sins that have his Spirit griev'd,  
 Mark'd by an unerring hand,  
 In his book recorded stand ;  
 Who can tell the vast amount,  
 Plac'd to each of our account ?
- 3 Happy, the believing soul !  
 Christ for you has paid the whole ;  
 While you own the debt is large,  
 You may plead a full discharge :  
 But, poor careless sinner, say,  
 What can you to justice pay !  
 Tremble, lest when life is past,  
 Into prison you be cast ?
- 4 Will you still increase the score ?  
 Still be careless, as before ?  
 Oh, forbid it, gracious Lord,  
 Touch their spirits by thy word !  
 Now, in mercy, to them show  
 What a mighty debt they owe !  
 All their unbelief subdue ;  
 Let *them* find forgiveness too.



- 5 Spar'd to see another year,  
 Let thy blessing meet us here;  
 Come, thy dying work revive,  
 Bid thy drooping garden thrive :  
 Sun of righteousness, arise !  
 Warm our hearts, and bless our eyes;  
 Let our pray'r thy bowels move,  
 Make this year a time of love !

41. *Elijah's Prayer* (1).

- 1 **D**Oes it not grief and wonder move,  
 To think of Israel's shameful fall ?  
 Who needed miracles to prove  
 Whether the Lord was God or Baal !
- 2 Methinks I see Elijah stand,  
 His features glow with love and zeal,  
 In faith and pray'r he lifts his hand,  
 And makes to Heav'n his great appeal.
- 3 " O God ! if I thy servant am,  
 If 'tis thy message fills my heart;  
 Now glorify thy holy name,  
 And shew this people who thou art !"
- 4 He spake, and lo ! a sudden flame  
 Consum'd the wood, the dust, the stone;  
 The people struck, at once proclaim,  
 " The Lord is God, the Lord alone."
- 5 Like him, we mourn an awful day,  
 When more for Baal than God appear;  
 Like him, believers, let us pray,  
 And may the God of Israel hear !
- 6 Lord, if thy servant speaks thy truth,  
 If he indeed is sent by thee,  
 Confirm the word to all our youth,  
 And let them thy salvation see.

(1) 1 Kings, xviii.

7 Now



- 7 Now may thy Spirit's holy fire  
 Pierce ev'ry heart that hears thy word,  
 Consume each hurtful vain desire,  
 And make them know thou art the Lord.

42. *Gospel-privileges.*

- 1 **O** Happy they who know the Lord,  
 With whom he deigns to dwell !  
 He feeds and cheers them by his word,  
 His arm supports them well.
- 2 To them, in each distressing hour,  
 His throne of grace is near ;  
 And when they plead his love and pow'r,  
 He stands engag'd to hear.
- 3 He help'd his saints in ancient days  
 Who trusted in his name ;  
 And we can witness, to his praise,  
 His love is still the same.
- 4 Wand'ring in sin, our souls he found,  
 And bid us seek his face ;  
 Gave us to hear the gospel-sound,  
 And taste the gospel-grace.
- 5 Oft in his house his glory shines  
 Before our wond'ring eyes ;  
 We wish not, then, for golden mines,  
 Or ought beneath the skies.
- 6 His presence sweetens all our cares,  
 And makes our burdens light ;  
 A word from him dispels our fears,  
 And gilds the gloom of night.
- 7 Lord, we expect to suffer here,  
 Nor would we dare repine ;  
 But give us, still, to find thee near,  
 And own us, still, for thine.
- 8 Let us enjoy, and highly prize  
 These tokens of thy love ;  
 Till thou shalt bid our spirits rise,  
 To worship thee above.

43. *Looking*



43. *Looking at the cross.*

- 1 **I**N evil long I took delight,  
Unaw'd by shame or fear,  
Till a new object struck my sight,  
And stopp'd my wild career.
- 2 I saw one hanging on a tree,  
In agonies and blood;  
Who fix'd his languid eyes on me,  
As near his cross I stood.
- 3 Sure, never till my latest breath,  
Can I forget that look;  
It seem'd to charge me with his death,  
Tho' not a word he spoke.
- 4 My conscience felt, and own'd the guilt,  
And plung'd me in despair;  
I saw my sins his blood had spilt,  
And help'd to nail him there.
- 5 Alas ! I knew not what I did;  
But now my tears are vain;  
Where shall my trembling soul be hid ?  
For I the Lord have slain.
- 6 A second look he gave, which said,  
" I freely all forgive;  
" This blood is for thy ransom paid,  
" I die, that thou may'st live."
- 7 Thus, while his death my sin displays  
In all its blackest hue,  
(Such is the mystery of grace),  
It seals my pardon too.
- 8 With pleasing grief and mournful joy,  
My spirit now is fill'd;  
That I should such a life destroy,  
Yet live by him I kill'd.

44. *The*



44. *The word more precious than gold.*

- 1 **P**recious Bible ! what a treasure  
Does the word of God afford ?  
All I want for life or pleasure,  
Food and Med'cine, Shield and Sword :  
Let the world account me poor,  
Having this I need no more.
- 2 Food to which the world's a stranger,  
Here my hungry soul enjoys ;  
Of excess there is no danger,  
Tho' it fills, it never cloy :  
On a dying Christ I feed,  
He is meat and drink indeed !
- 3 When my faith is faint and sickly,  
Or when Satan wounds my mind,  
Cordials, to revive me quickly,  
Healing Med'cines here I find :  
To the promises I flee,  
Each affords a remedy.
- 4 In the hour of dark temptation  
Satan cannot make me yield ;  
For the word of consolation  
Is to me a mighty Shield :  
While the scripture-truths are sure,  
From his malice I'm secure.
- 5 Vain his threats to overcome me,  
When I take the Spirit's Sword ;  
Then with ease I drive him from me,  
Satan trembles at the word :  
'Tis a sword for conquest made,  
Keen the edge, and strong the blade.
- 6 Shall I envy then the miser  
Doating on his golden store ?  
Sure I am, or should be, wiser,  
I am Rich, 'tis he is Poor :  
Jesus gives me in his word  
Food and Med'cine, Shield and Sword.

45. *On*



45. *On the commencement of hostilities in America.*

- 1 **T**HE gath'ring clouds, with aspect dark,  
 A rising storm presage;  
 Oh! to be hid within the ark,  
 And shelter'd from its rage!
- 2 See the commission'd angel frown (1) !  
 That vial in his hand,  
 Fill'd with fierce wrath, is pouring down  
 Upon our guilty land!
- 3 Ye saints, unite in wrestling pray'r,  
 If yet there may be hope;  
 Who knows but Mercy yet may spare,  
 And bid the angel stop (2) ?
- 4 Already is the plague begun (3),  
 And, fir'd with hostile rage,  
 Brethren, by blood and int'rest one,  
 With brethren now engage.
- 5 Peace spreads her wings, prepar'd for flight,  
 And war, with flaming sword,  
 And hasty strides draws nigh, to fight  
 The battles of the Lord.
- 6 The first alarm, alas! how few,  
 While distant, seem to hear!  
 But they will hear, and tremble too,  
 When God shall send it near.
- 7 So thunder, o'er the distant hills,  
 Gives but a murm'ring sound;  
 But as the tempest spreads, it fills,  
 And shakes the welkin (4) round.
- 8 May we, at least, with one consent,  
 Fall low before the throne;  
 With tears the nation's sins lament,  
 The church's, and our own.

(1) Rev. xvi. 1.

(2) 1 Sam. xxiv. 16.

(3) Numb. xvi. 46.

(4) Firmament, or atmosphere.



- 6 The humble souls who mourn and pray,  
 The Lord approves, and knows;  
 His mark secures them in the day  
 When vengeance strikes his foes.

46. *On the death of a Believer.*

- 1 **I**N vain my fancy strives to paint  
 The moment after death,  
 The glories that surround the saint,  
 When yielding up its breath.
- 2 One gentle sigh their fetters breaks;  
 We scarce can say, "They're gone!"  
 Before the willing spirit takes  
 Her mansion near the throne.
- 3 Faith strives, but all its efforts fail,  
 To trace her in her flight:  
 No eye can pierce within the veil  
 Which hides that world of light.
- 4 Thus much (and this is all) we know,  
 They are completely blest;  
 Have done with sin, and care, and wo,  
 And with their Saviour rest.
- 5 On harps of gold they praise his name,  
 His face they always view;  
 Then let us follow's be of them,  
 That we may praise him too.
- 6 Their faith and patience, love and zeal,  
 Should make their mem'ry dear;  
 And, Lord, do thou the pray'rs fulfil  
 They offer'd for us here!
- 7 While they have gain'd, we losers are,  
 We miss them day by day;  
 But thou canst ev'ry breach repair,  
 And wipe our tears away.
- 8 We pray, as in Elisha's case,  
 When great Elijah went,  
 May double portions of thy grace,  
 To us who stay, be sent.

47. *The*



47. *The tolling bell.*

- 1 **O**FT as the bell, with solemn toll,  
 Speaks the departure of a soul,  
 Let each one ask himself, "Am I  
 Prepar'd, should I be call'd to die?"
- 2 Only this frail and fleeting breath  
 Preserves me from the jaws of death;  
 Soon as it fails, at once I'm gone,  
 And plung'd into a world unknown.
- 3 Then, leaving all I lov'd below,  
 To God's tribunal I must go;  
 Must hear the Judge pronounce my fate,  
 And fix my everlasting state.
- 4 But could I bear to hear him say,  
 "Depart, accursed, far away!  
 With Satan, in the lowest hell,  
 Thou art for ever doom'd to dwell."
- 5 Lord Jesus! help me now to flee,  
 And seek my hope alone in thee;  
 Apply thy blood, thy Spirit give,  
 Subdue my sin, and in me live.
- 6 Then, when the solemn bell I hear,  
 If sav'd from guilt, I need not fear;  
 Nor would the thought distressing be,  
 Perhaps it next may toll for me.
- 7 Rather, my spirit would rejoice,  
 And long, and wish, to hear thy voice;  
 Glad when it bids me earth resign,  
 Secure of heaven, if thou art mine.

48. *Lightening in the night.*

- 1 **A** Glance from Heav'n, with sweet effect,  
 Sometimes my pensive spirit cheers;  
 But, ere I can my thoughts collect,  
 As suddenly it disappears.

F f 2

2 So



- 2 So light'ning, in the gloom of night,  
Affords a momentary day;  
Disclosing objects full in sight,  
Which, soon as seen, are snatch'd away.
- 3 Ah! what avail these pleasing scenes!  
They do but aggravate my pain;  
While darkness quickly intervenes,  
And swallows up my joys again.
- 4 But shall I murmur at relief?  
'Tho' short, it was a precious view,  
Sent to controul my unbelief,  
And prove that what I read is true.
- 5 The light'nings flash did not create  
The op'ning prospect it reveal'd;  
But only shew'd the real state  
Of what the darkness had conceal'd.
- 6 Just so, we by a glimpse discern  
The glorious things within the veil,  
That, when in darkness, we may learn  
To live by faith, till light prevail.
- 7 The Lord's great day will soon advance,  
Dispersing all the shades of night;  
Then we no more shall need a glance,  
But see by an eternal Light.

49. *On the eclipse of the moon, July 30. 1776.*

- 1 **T**HE moon in silver glory shone,  
And not a cloud in sight,  
When suddenly a shade begun  
To intercept her light.
- 2 How fast across her orb it spread,  
How fast her light withdrew!  
A circle, ting'd with languid red,  
Was all appear'd in view.
- 3 While many, with unmeaning eye,  
Gaze on thy works in vain,  
Assist me, Lord, that I may try  
Instruction to obtain.

4 Fain



- 4 Fain would my thankful heart and lips  
 Unite in praise to thee,  
 And meditate on thy eclipse,  
 In sad Gethsemane.
- 5 Thy peoples guilt, a heavy load !  
 (When standing in their room),  
 Depriv'd thee of the light of God,  
 And fill'd thy soul with gloom.
- 6 How punctually eclipses move,  
 Obedient to thy will !  
 Thus shall thy faithfulness and love  
 Thy promises fulfil.
- 7 Dark like the moon without the sun,  
 I mourn thine absence, Lord !  
 For light or comfort I have none,  
 But what thy beams afford.
- 8 But lo ! the hour draws near apace,  
 When changes shall be o'er ;  
 Then I shall see thee face to face,  
 And be eclips'd no more.

50. *Moon-light.*

- 1 **T**HE moon has but a borrow'd light,  
 A faint and feeble ray ;  
 She owes her beauty to the night,  
 And hides herself by day.
- 2 No chearing warmth her beam conveys,  
 Tho' pleasing to behold ;  
 We might upon her brightness gaze  
 Till we were starv'd with cold.
- 3 Just such is all the light to man  
 Which reason can impart ;  
 It cannot shew one object plain,  
 Nor warm the frozen heart.
- 4 Thus moon-light views of truths divine  
 To many fatal prove ;

F f 3.

For



- For what avail in gifts to shine (1),  
 Without a spark of love ?
- 5 The gospel, like the sun at noon,  
 Affords a glorious light ;  
 Then fallen reason's boasted moon  
 Appears no longer bright.
- 6 And grace, not light alone, bestows,  
 But adds a quick'ning pow'r ;  
 The desert blossoms like the rose (2),  
 And sin prevails no more.

51. *The bee saved from the spider.*

- 1 **T**HE subtle spider often weaves  
 His unsuspected snares,  
 Among the balmy flow'rs and leaves,  
 To which the bee repairs.
- 2 When in his web he sees one hang,  
 With a malicious joy  
 He darts upon it with his fang,  
 To poison and destroy.
- 3 How welcome, then, some pitying friend,  
 To save the threat'ned bee !  
 The spider's treach'rous web to rend,  
 And set the captive free !
- 4 My soul has been in such a case,  
 When first I knew the Lord,  
 I hasted to the means of grace,  
 Where sweets I knew were stor'd.
- 5 Little I thought of danger near,  
 That soon my joys would ebb ;  
 But, ah ! I met a spider there,  
 Who caught me in his web.
- 6 Then Satan rais'd his pois'nous sting,  
 And aim'd his blows at me ;  
 While I, poor, helpless, trembling thing,  
 Could neither fight nor flee.

(1) 1 Cor. xiii. 1.

(2) Isaiah, xxxv. 1.



- 7 But, oh ! the Saviour's pitying eye  
 Reliev'd me from despair ;  
 He saw me at the point to die,  
 And broke the fatal snare.
- 8 My case his heedless saints should warn,  
 Or cheer them if afraid ;  
 May you from me your danger learn,  
 And where to look for aid.

52. *The garden.*

- 1 **A** Garden contemplation suits,  
 And may instruction yield,  
 Sweeter than all the flow'rs and fruits  
 With which the spot is fill'd.
- 2 Eden was Adam's dwelling-place,  
 While bless'd with innocence ;  
 But sin o'erwhelm'd him with disgrace,  
 And drove the rebel thence.
- 3 Oft as the garden-walk we tread,  
 We should bemoan his fall ;  
 The trespass of our legal head  
 In ruin plung'd us all.
- 4 The garden of Gethsemane,  
 The second Adam saw,  
 Oppress'd with wo, to set us free  
 From the avenging law.
- 5 How stupid we, who can forget,  
 With gardens in our sight,  
 His agonies and bloody sweat,  
 In that tremendous night !
- 6 His church as a fair garden stands,  
 Which walls of love inclose ;  
 Each tree is planted by his hand (1),  
 And by his blessing grows.
- 7 Believing hearts are gardens too ;  
 For grace has sown its seeds,

(1) Is. lxi. 3.

Where



- Where once, by nature, nothing grew  
 But thorns and worthless weeds.  
 8 Such themes to those who Jesus love,  
 May constant joys afford,  
 And make a barren desert prove  
 The garden of the Lord.

53. *Why should I complain?*

- 1 **W**hen my Saviour, my Shepherd is near,  
 How quickly my sorrows depart!  
 New beauties around me appear,  
 New spirits enliven my heart:  
 His presence gives peace to my soul,  
 And Satan assaults me in vain;  
 While my Shepherd his power controuls,  
 I think I no more shall complain.
- 2 But, alas! what a change do I find,  
 When my Shepherd withdraws from my sight?  
 My fears all return to my mind,  
 My day is soon chang'd into night:  
 Then Satan his efforts renews  
 To vex and ensnare me again;  
 All my pleasing enjoyments I lose,  
 And can only lament and complain.
- 3 By these changes I often pass through,  
 I am taught my own weakness to know;  
 I am taught what my Shepherd can do,  
 And how much to his mercy I owe:  
 It is he who supports me through all,  
 When I faint he revives me again;  
 He attends to my pray'r when I call,  
 And bids me no longer complain.
- 4 Wherefore then should I murmur and grieve?  
 Since my Shepherd is always the same,  
 And has promis'd he never will leave (1)  
 The soul that confides in his name:

(1) Jer. i. 19.



- To relieve me from all that I fear,  
 He was buffeted, tempted, and slain;  
 And at length he will surely appear,  
 Tho' he leaves me awhile to complain.  
 5 While I dwell in an enemy's land,  
 Can I hope to be always in peace?  
 'Tis enough that my Shepherd's at hand,  
 And that shortly this warfare will cease;  
 For ere long he will bid me remove (2)  
 From this region of sorrow and pain,  
 To abide in his presence above,  
 And then I no more shall complain.

54. *Prayer answered by crosses.*

- 1 I Ask'd the Lord that I might grow  
 In faith, and love, and ev'ry grace;  
 Might more of his salvation know,  
 And seek more earnestly his face.  
 2 'Twas he who taught me thus to pray,  
 And he, I trust, has answer'd pray'r;  
 But it has been in such a way,  
 As almost drove me to despair.  
 3 I hop'd that in some favour'd hour,  
 At once he'd answer my request,  
 And, by his love's constraining pow'r,  
 Subdue my sins, and give me rest.  
 4 Instead of this, he made me feel  
 The hidden evils of my heart;  
 And let the angry pow'rs of hell  
 Assault my soul in ev'ry part.  
 5 Yea more, with his own hand he seem'd  
 Intent to aggravate my woe;  
 Cross'd all the fair designs I schem'd,  
 Blasted my gourds, and laid me low.

(1) Rev. ii. 10.

6 Lord,



- 6 Lord, why is this, I trembling cry'd,  
 Wilt thou pursue thy worm to death ?  
 " 'Tis in this way, the Lord reply'd,  
 I answer pray'r for grace and faith :  
 7 These inward trials I employ,  
 From self, and pride, to set thee free ;  
 And break thy schemes of earthly joy,  
 That thou may'st find thy all in me."

*55. I will trust, and not be afraid.*

- 1 **B**Egone unbelief,  
 My Saviour is near,  
 And for my relief  
 Will surely appear :  
 By pray'r let me wrestle,  
 And he will perform ;  
 With Christ in the vessel,  
 I smile at the storm.  
 2 Tho' dark be my way,  
 Since he is my guide,  
 'Tis mine to obey,  
 'Tis his to provide ;  
 Tho' cisterns be broken,  
 And creatures all fail,  
 The word he has spoken  
 Shall surely prevail.  
 3 His love in time past,  
 Forbids me to think,  
 He'll leave me at last  
 In trouble to sink ;  
 Each sweet Ebenezer  
 I have in review,  
 Confirms his good pleasure  
 To help me quite thro'.  
 4 Determin'd to save,  
 He watch'd o'er my path,  
 When, Satan's blind slave,  
 I sported with death ;

And



- And can he have taught me  
 To trust in his name,  
 And thus far have brought me,  
 To put me to shame ?
- 5 Why should I complain  
 Of want or distress,  
 Temptation or pain ?  
 He told me no less :  
 The heirs of salvation,  
 I know from his word,  
 Thro' much tribulation  
 Must follow their Lord (1).
- 6 How bitter that cup,  
 No heart can conceive,  
 Which he drank quite up,  
 That sinners might live !  
 His way was much rougher,  
 And darker than mine ;  
 Did Jesus thus suffer,  
 And shall I repine ?
- 7 Since all that I meet  
 Shall work for my good,  
 The bitter is sweet,  
 The med'cine is food ;  
 Tho' painful at present,  
 Will cease before long,  
 -And then, oh ! how pleasant,  
 The conqueror's song (2) !

56. *Questions to unbelief.*

- 1 IF to Jesus for relief  
 My soul has fled by pray'r ;  
 Why should I give way to grief,  
 Or heart-consuming care ?

(1) Acts, xiv. 22.

(2) Rom. viii. 37.

Are



- Are not all things in his hand?  
 Has he not his promise past?  
 Will he then regardless stand,  
 And let me sink at last?
- 2 While I know his providence  
 Disposes each event,  
 Shall I judge by feeble sense,  
 And yield to discontent?  
 If he worms and sparrows feed,  
 Clothe the grass in rich array (1);  
 Can he see a child in need,  
 And turn his eye away?
- 3 When his name was quite unknown,  
 And sin my life employ'd;  
 Then he watch'd me as his own,  
 Or I had been destroy'd:  
 Now his mercy-feat I know,  
 Now by grace am reconcil'd;  
 Would he spare me while a foe (2),  
 To leave me when a child?
- 4 If he all my wants supply'd  
 When I disdain'd to pray;  
 Now his Spirit is my guide,  
 How can he say me nay?  
 If he would not give me up,  
 When my soul against him fought;  
 Will he disappoint the hope,  
 Which he himself has wrought?
- 5 If he shed his precious blood  
 To bring me to his fold;  
 Can I think that meaner good (3)  
 He ever will with-hold?  
 Satan, vain is thy device!  
 Here my hope rests well-assur'd,  
 In that great redemption-price,  
 I see the whole secur'd.

(1) Matth. vi. 26.—30.

(2) Rom. v. 10.

(3) Rom. viii. 32.



57. *Hear what he has done for my soul!*

- 1 SAV'd by blood, I live to tell,  
What the love of Christ hath done;  
He redeem'd my soul from hell,  
Of a rebel made a son:  
Oh I tremble still to think,  
How secure I liv'd in sin,  
Sporting on destruction's brink,  
Yet preserv'd from falling in.
- 2 In his own appointed hour,  
To my heart the Saviour spoke,  
Touch'd me by his spirit's pow'r,  
And my dang'rous slumber broke:  
Then I saw and own'd my guilt,  
Soon my gracious Lord reply'd;  
"Fear not, I my blood have spilt,  
'Twas for such as thee I dy'd."
- 3 Shame and wonder, joy and love,  
All at once possess'd my heart;  
Can I hope thy grace to prove,  
After acting such a part?  
"Thou hast greatly sinn'd, he said,  
But I freely all forgive;  
I myself thy debt have paid,  
Now I bid thee rise and live."
- 4 Come, my fellow-sinners, try;  
Jesus' heart is full of love;  
Oh that you, as well as I,  
May his wond'rous mercy prove!  
He has sent me to declare,  
All is ready, all is free;  
Why should any soul despair,  
When he sav'd a wretch like me?



58. *True and false zeal.*

- 1 **Z**Eal is that pure and heav'nly flame  
The fire of love supplies;  
While that which often bears the name,  
Is self in a disguise.
- 2 True zeal is merciful and mild,  
Can pity and forbear;  
The false is headstrong, fierce, and wild,  
And breathes revenge and war.
- 3 While zeal for truth the Christian warms,  
He knows the worth of peace;  
But self contends for names and forms,  
Its party to increase.
- 4 Zeal has attain'd its highest aim,  
Its end is satisfy'd,  
If sinners love the Saviour's name,  
Nor seeks it ought beside.
- 5 But self, however well employ'd,  
Has its own ends in view;  
And says, as boasting Jehu cry'd (1),  
"Come, see what I can do."
- 6 Self may its poor reward obtain,  
And be applauded here;  
But zeal the best applause will gain  
When Jesus shall appear.
- 7 Dear Lord, the idol self dethrone,  
And from our hearts remove;  
And let no zeal by us be shewn,  
But that which springs from love.

59. *Praise for redeeming love.*

- 1 **L**ET us *love*, and *sing*, and *wonder*;  
Let us *praise* the Saviour's name!  
He has hush'd the law's loud thunder,  
He has quench'd mount Sinai's flame:

(1) 2 Kings, x. 16.

He



- He has wash'd us with his blood,  
 He has brought us nigh to God.
- 2 Let us *love* the Lord who bought us,  
 Pity'd us when enemies;  
 Call'd us by his grace, and taught us,  
 Gave us ears, and gave us eyes :  
 He has wash'd us with his blood,  
 He presents our souls to God.
- 3 Let us *sing*, tho' fierce temptations  
 Threaten hard to bear us down !  
 For the Lord, our strong salvation (1),  
 Holds in view the conqu'rors crown :  
 He who wash'd us with his blood,  
 Soon will bring us home to God.
- 4 Let us *wonder*, grace and justice,  
 Join, and point to mercy's store ;  
 When through grace in Christ our trust is,  
 Justice smiles and asks no more :  
 He who wash'd us with his blood,  
 Has secur'd our way to God.
- 5 Let us *praise*, and join the chorus  
 Of the saints, enthron'd on high ;  
 Here they trusted him before us,  
 Now their praises fill the sky (2) :  
 " 'Thou hast wash'd us with thy blood,  
 'Thou art worthy, Lamb of God !"
- 6 Hark ! the name of Jesus, sounded  
 Loud, from golden harps above !  
 Lord, we blush, and are confounded,  
 Faint our praises, cold our love !  
 Wash our souls and songs with blood,  
 For by thee we come to God.

(1) Rev. ii. 10.

(2) Rev. v. 9.

F I N I S.























B 2386(3)







L E T T E R S,  
S E R M O N S,  
A N D  
A REVIEW of  
ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

By JOHN NEWTON,  
Late Curate of Olney, Bucks.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

V o L. III.

